OLD SCITUATE

With love to Michael

from Grama 1970-

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2025

https://archive.org/details/bwb_Y0-BWG-727

Old Scituate

PUBLISHED BY
CHIEF JUSTICE CUSHING CHAPTER
DAUGHTERS OF THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION
1921

Copyright, 1921
BY
CHIEF JUSTICE CUSHING CHAPTER
DAUGHTERS OF THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION

SECOND EDITION 1970
PRINTED IN THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

This second edition of *Old Scituate* is dedicated to our Ex-Regents

Ella Turner Bates	1905-1910
Mary A. Ford	1910-1913
Mary L. Power	1913-1922
Laura Tolman	1922-1925
Nellie L. Sparrell	1925-1928
Ella Gertrude Waterman	1928-1931
Catherine Tilden Phillips	1931-1934
Isabelle Frances Nason	1934-1935
Julia Dills Chamberlin	1935-1938
Eveline Adams Peirce	1938-1941
Nellie L. Sparrell	1941-1944
Amelia I. Severance	1944-1947
Miriam Austin Bradley	1947-1950
Isabelle Frances Nason	1950-1953
Alice Parker Huntley	1953-1956
Corinne Damon Hall	1956-1959
Margaret Eno Percy	1959-1961
Grace Evans Beal	1961-1965
Fanny Hitchcock Phillips	1965-1968

CHIEF JUSTICE CUSHING CHAPTER
1970

OFFICERS

Madelon Burbeck Baltzer, Regent

Marjorie Evelyn Cousins, Vice Regent

Dorothy Brown Wood, Chaplain

Dorothy Farnsworth Painten, Recording Secretary

Margret Donovan Walls, Corresponding Secretary

Dorothy Mae Westhaver, Treasurer

Ann Lillian Brennan, Registrar

Katherine Hudgins Doherty, Historian

Lois Harriet Turner, Librarian

MEMBERS

Adele Waterman Allen

Ruth P. Barron

Amy Frye Bates

Grace Evans Beal

Miriam Austin Bradley

Grace E. Christie

Louise Ives Crawford

Janice Floyd Curran

Isabella Faulkner Fogg

Virginia G. Gillett

Grace Margaret Greenwood

Marjorie Groce Greenwood

Corinne Damon Hall

Amy Dickens Lindholm

Maida Caulfield McKenzie

Gertrude Merrill Murphy

Esther Church Phillips

Fanny Hitchcock Phillips

Deborah Mae Pike

Elizabeth Berry Power

Grace LaVine Sparrell

Christine Baltzer Tyll

Ina Bailey Wilder

APPLICATION IN PROCESS

Jean Temperance Isham

Foreword

THE contents of this volume represent, in part, the historical papers collected by Chief Justice Cushing Chapter D. A. R. during the past fifteen years. In preparing them for publication, the committee has found it necessary to omit much genealogical data, in order to make use of more historical facts which mark the milestones along the "ways" of the town's history.

The idea of putting the collection in book form originated in the mind of our founder and first Regent, Ella Turner Bates, whose enthusiasm and perseverance have led us to complete the thought so dear to her heart.

We wish to express our appreciation for the assistance that many who are not Chapter members have given us. In this connection we would mention the late Jedediah Dwelley, author of "Dwelley's History of Hanover;" William Gould Vinal, instructor in Nature Study in the Rhode Island State Normal School; Lieut.-Col. L. Vernon Briggs, U. S. A., author of "Shipbuilding on the North River;" Nelson M. Stetson, secretary of the Stetson Kindred of America; Dr. Oliver H. Howe; E. Pomeroy Collier; Mrs. Mary Carr Stillwell; Samuel F. Wilkins; the late Charles Otis Ellms, and others.

There has been no attempt to present a history of the old town of Scituate, or to make this volume a complement of Deane's history, published in 1831. We present its contents, arranged in no especial chronological order, to those who may be interested in the story of the ancient town.

In collecting photographs for the illustrations, the committee has aimed to secure, when possible, early pictures that show the ancient houses as they looked in the past.

Scituate's territory in 1656 was very large, for it included all the land granted to the original settlement, and in addition that of the Conihasset Grant of 1637, and the later one to Mr. Hatherly.

The town lost much of its extensive territory in 1727, when the new town of Hanover was incorporated, and in 1788, the Two Mile was annexed to Marshfield. During the last century two changes in territorial bounds were made. In 1823, a part of Scituate near the "Gulph" was annexed to Cohasset, and again, in 1840, the line was re-established and straightened, and a part of each town annexed to the other.

The last division was made February 14, 1849, when the south part of the town petitioned to be set off, and incorporated as the town of South Scituate. In 1888, that name was changed to Norwell, for Henry Norwell, of Boston, a summer resident, whose wife was of well-known Scituate ancestry.

The reasons for the division are not clearly understood at the present day, except by inference, but at the time of the division, Scituate's chief interests were her farms and her fishing industry. There were no summer residents at her beaches to swell her valuation, and the shore property was then of little intrinsic value, except for the kelp cast up by the surf. This highly valued product of the sea was the cause of much interesting litigation in years past.

South Scituate's shipbuilding industry was decidedly on the wane in 1849, but the desire to maintain her own roads and schools may have been a dominant factor in bringing about the division. It is remembered that South Scituate was thought at the time to have got the better of the bargain, as the Town Hall, then at Sherman's Corner, and the Town Farm in South Scituate Village fell to her share. We now realize that Scituate was the fortunate partner of the contract, her then undeveloped shore property having become her greatest asset.

Table of Contents

PAGE

THE EARLY SETTLEMENT 1
Mary L. F. Power

INDIAN RAID OF 1676 7
Mary L. F. Power

CORNET ROBERT STETSON 15
Nelson M. Stetson

MANN HILL 23
Charles Otis Ellms

EARLY INDUSTRIES 27
Ella Turner Bates

THE VASSALLS AT BELLE HOUSE NECK . . 30
Mary L. F. Power

THE "FAMILY OF JUDGES" 35
Mary L. F. Power

POST ROADS AND TAVERNS 58
Mary L. F. Power

AN ANCIENT COLONIAL BOUNDARY . . 69
Oliver H. Howe, M. D.

THE QUAKERS IN SCITUATE 72
Mary L. F. Power

THE ACADIANS 78
Arr. from article by Hon. Jedediah Dwelley

SEVENTEENTH CENTURY HOUSES . . . 84
Chapter Members

EIGHTEENTH CENTURY HOUSES . . . 112
Chapter Members

PAGE

The Old Lighthouse at Scituate Harbor . 143
Mary Emerson Walbach

North River, and Shipbuilding on Its Banks . 147
L. Vernon Briggs, M. D.

Navigation 159
Ella Turner Bates

Church History:

First Parish Church . . . 162
Ella Turner Bates

The Second Church of Christ in Scituate, now the First Parish Church of Norwell 169
Mary L. F. Power

St. Andrew's Church. Arr. from History . 176
The Rev. Wm. Brooks, D. D.

The Universalist Church, Assinippi . 182
John F. Simmons

The Methodist Episcopal Church . . 186
Harriet Marshall Welch

Trinitarian Congregational Church . 192
Julietta Hunt

First Baptist Church, North Scituate . 195
Sarah Bailey

Methodist Episcopal Church at Church Hill 200
Melvin M. Little

Roman Catholic Church . . . 202
Mary A. Doherty

Swedenborgian Chapel . . . 207

Chapel at Sherman's Corner . . 208
Clara Sherman Hersey

Seaside Chapel, North Scituate Beach . 208

PAGE

Mills 210
Mary L. F. Power

Early Poets 223
Carrie K. Kellogg

Early Artists 226
Marion C. Alexander

Mossing 229
Ella Turner Bates

The Past Geography of Scituate, Massachusetts 231
William Gould Vinal

Memorable Storms 239
Samuel F. Wilkins and others

The Humane Society of Massachusetts . 244
Harriet Marshall Welch

Wrecks on Scituate's Shore . . . 245
Harriet Marshall Welch

Town Seals 262

Communion Silver of the First Parish Church, Scituate 264

An Interesting Bill of Sale . . . 265

Scituate Soldiers and Sailors of the American Revolution 266
Clara Turner Bates

Index 277

The Early Settlement

THE shores of Massachusetts Bay, both above and below Plymouth, were visited by the Pilgrims very soon after the settlement was made, and desirable locations for further settlement were noted. Timothy Hatherly came to Plymouth in the ship *Ann* in 1623, and was one of the number that was impressed with the natural advantages of the territory around the four cliffs, the harbor, and the North River, which, as a highway into the interior, afforded an approach to the extensive forests of pine and white oak that abounded in this section. Successful fisheries and a lucrative trade with the natives and with the Dutch were anticipated, and these necessitated a safe and convenient place to build the vessels to carry on these industries. The section around "Satuit" was adaptable for these purposes.

Hatherly was one of the "Merchant Adventurers" who had financed the first *Mayflower* company. He came to Plymouth to see for himself the probable success or failure of the venture. If his partners were greatly concerned about their investment, it seems hardly possible that Hatherly agreed with them after his first visit of two years, for he returned to England in 1625 with some

The above is a Monument to the "Men of Kent," in first burying-ground, on Meeting-house Lane.

expectation, it appears, that large grants of land could be secured from the colony that would prove of great value. Soon after his return to England, he sent his nephew, Edward Foster, a lawyer, to the colony, to look after his interests, and keep him informed of affairs in Plymouth during his absence.

Hatherly's expectations seemed in a fair way to be realized in 1633, when the Colony Court ordered "that the whole tract of land between the brook at Scituate on the N. W. side and Conihasset, be left undisposed of, till we know the resolution of Mr. James Shirley, Mr. John Beauchamp, Mr. Richard Andrews, and Mr. Timothy Hatherly." Hatherly returned in 1632, but the tract was not granted to the above-named gentlemen until 1637. It extended from high water mark in Satuit Brook three miles up into the woods. In 1654 and 1656, other extensive grants were added to the original one, until the lands granted to the partners embraced not only a large part of the o iginal town of Scituate before its division, but a large part of the towns of Hanover and Rockland. These grants were known as the "Conihasset Grants." Before 1646, Hatherly had purchased the interests of his partners, and formed a stock company, consisting of twenty-six persons, many of them settlers upon the lands, who called themselves the "Conihasset Partners."

Before 1628, the "Men of Kent," as the first settlers in Scituate have been called, made some kind of a settlement at Satuit. The earliest record bears date of 1628, conveying land from Henry Merritt to Nathaniel Tilden: "All that land which I had of Goodman Byrd, lying within the fence at the north end of the third cliffe, unto the land of Nathaniel Tilden." (Col. Rec.) There is a tradition in the Turner family that Humphrey Turner owned his farm east of Colman Hills in 1626, although he resided in Plymouth until 1633. If it is true that land was assigned Turner in 1626, it is probable that the first owners of the Third Cliff lots received theirs as early. Nathaniel Tilden is said to have had a farm at Satuit

in 1626, of which his Third Cliff lots may have formed the whole or a part.

County Kent, England, has been noted in history for the loyalty, gallantry, and courtly manners of its men. The majority of the first settlers were from that county, and they attracted to their venture others of the same type from Devonshire and London, like Hatherly, Foster, and Vassall. The name "Men of Kent" has been applied to the entire group, implying that they were a company of the best class of English gentlemen of their day; men of education, many of them college graduates, and of considerable fortune, who had been accustomed to such refinements and elegancies as English life of their period afforded. Deane goes so far as to say, in 1831, that "In 1639, this town contained more men of distinguished talents and fair fortune, than it has contained at any period since." It was then the most populous settlement in the colony. Plymouth had suffered because of removals to other places. Emigrations from Scituate had not as yet begun, and there was some prospect of its being made the seat of government.

In 1633, the first village was laid out along Kent Street. Its houses were built of logs, and roofed with thatch from the neighboring marshes. Litchfield, in his "Litchfield Family in America," says: "When Rev. John Lothrop came (Sept., 1633), he found at Scituate friends whom he had known in England. They had built at the time nine 'pallizado houses,' probably structures made of logs protected by pallissades, as temporary residences, which were replaced later by more substantial homes. In 1635–6 there were 31 houses built, and in 1637, there was a total of 51." All of these were log houses, as there was no sawmill until 1640.

During the summer of 1633, six lots along Kent Street, beginning at Satuit Brook, were apportioned in the following order: to Edward Foster, William Gillson, Henry Rowley, Humphrey Turner, Henry Cobb, and Anthony Annable. They began erecting houses at once,

and at the same time a meeting-house on what is known as Meeting-house Lane, leading from Kent Street west to the common lands. By the time Mr. Lothrop arrived, the meeting-house had been built and "exercised in" by Mr. Saxton. Other settlers arrived the following spring, and were allotted lands that extended around the hills to the mouth of the First Herring Brook at "the green bush." By the time Mr. Lothrop arrived, all lots bordering on Kent Street had been assigned, and a farm for the minister laid out adjoining Turner's, the Cole farm of today. In 1634, Robert Stetson ascended the North River four miles into the wilderness, and built a home on a large grant of land allotted him by the Colony Court. He was the pioneer settler of South Scituate.

By 1636, Mr. Hatherly applied to the court for more land for settlement, saying the place was already "too straite for them." His own negotiation for land north of the brook had not been completed. Settlers were taking up lands on this tract without orders from the court, with whom he would have to make settlement if his land project succeeded, and he wished to find territory in another direction, fertile and well situated, that would attract settlers away from Conihasset for a time. Mr. Vassall had been granted about 200 acres on the river, and other grants were made of the so-called "greate lottes" on the north side of the river from Vassall's to Stetson's. These river lots were desirable ones, because of the marsh hay, then the best forage that they had for their cattle. On the south side of the river were more extensive meadow lands, not yet allotted to any township. In 1637, a tract two miles long and one mile wide along the river was granted Scituate by the court. The "Two Miles," known to the present time by that name, was a part of Scituate until 1788. The people in general belonged to the Second Parish, and the Oakmans and Cushings attended there until a comparatively recent date.

Courtesy of C. B. Webster Co.

"Stretch wide, O Marshes, in your golden joy!
Stretch ample, Marshes, in serene delight!

* * * * * * *

I am standing under Pilgrim shades
Far off where Scituate lapses to the sea."

— "*Seaward*," *Richard Hovey*.

In 1642, the town boundaries included all the territory on the north side of the North and Indian Head rivers to the Indian Head Pond in Hanson; thence to a line running straight across country to Accord Pond, and from this point to the sea, according to the line laid out by the commissioners of the two colonies in 1640; and the Two Mile tract allotted in 1637. To this large tract was added, in 1656, the nine square miles, now a part of Hanover and Rockland, granted to Hatherly to reimburse him for making settlement with the squatters upon Conihasset.

Mr. Lothrop and members of his church from London arrived in September, 1634. (See "Church History.") By their removal to Barnstable in 1639, the population of

the town was materially decreased. It is said that nearly half the inhabitants departed. At this juncture Mr. Hatherly purchased the properties of all who wished to depart, and could not otherwise have done so. By the wise use of his fortune he carried the town safely through this critical period. He has rightfully been called the "Father of Scituate," for he was always ready to make use of his large fortune for the good of the settlement.

New settlers came in considerable numbers during the ten years after 1640. Roads, bridges, ferries, and mills were built, and the town prospered until the devastating Indian War, notwithstanding there was an emigration to York in 1650, one to Barbadoes in 1658, and in 1670 to Rehoboth and Swansey.

After the close of King Philip's War, settlers came in rapidly, and occupied the outlying lands, which now could be cultivated with a feeling of security. Large and substantial frame houses were built, several of them now standing. Most of the well-to-do settlers were interested in a profitable coasting trade, and one with Jamaica and Europe, established as early as 1646. Captain Travere, in the ship *William*, began a trade with the natives on the Hudson River in 1633, but there is no record of his further activities at Scituate. Captain Collamore and the Wantons sent out vessels from the North River before 1670. The fisheries also contributed largely toward the prosperity of the town. These enterprises created the shipbuilding industry, by far the most important mechanical industry the town has ever known. The first mill for grinding corn, and the first sawmill in the colony, were erected before 1640. By reason of the early advantage taken of her natural resources, Scituate soon became the most progressive of the South Shore towns.

View on North River

Indian Raid of 1676

THE most thrilling episode of the town's history is the Indian raid of 1676. The trouble with the Pequots in Connecticut in 1637 had affected Plymouth Colony very slightly, for upon the appeal of the Connecticut settlements, Captain Standish, with a volunteer force, marched to their assistance, although they arrived too late to be of service. Henry Ewell, of Scituate, whose wife was the heroine of the '76 raid, was one of Standish's men.

Military companies had been formed in the towns of Plymouth, Duxbury, and Marshfield as early as 1642, but because of the exodus to Barnstable, in 1639, Scituate was not made a "military discipline" until 1652, when the first company was formed, with James Cudworth as captain. It was as much for protection against the Dutch at Manhattan, as fear of Indian uprisings, that brought about the measure. Plymouth Colony had treated the Indians fairly, paid for all lands acquired,

and by treaties with Chief Massasoit had been able to maintain peace until after that chieftain's death; but his son, Philip, and the Narragansetts would not fulfill the treaties, and for some years before 1675 it was foreseen that an uprising would come sooner or later.

The first engagement in which Scituate troops took active part was the "Great Swamp Fight," in December, 1675. The weather was extremely cold, the snow deep, and the Plymouth troops, though victorious, suffered great hardships. The Narragansett fort was destroyed, and at least 1,100 Indians slain. Scituate had twenty men in this battle, led by Capt. Michael Peirce, who returned unharmed to lose his life a few months later near Pawtucket. Sergt. Theophilus Wetherell, son of the Rev. William, was desperately wounded, likewise John Wright, Joseph Turner, and William Perry. John Vinal, at a later date, was released from military duty because of having served in the Narragansett fight.

In the early spring of 1676, the Narragansetts began depredations in Rhode Island and in the outlying parts of Plymouth. When the alarm was sent out, Capt. Peirce was ordered to pursue them with a company of fifty men, and twenty Cape Cod Indians friendly to the whites. They followed the Indians, without once encountering them, to the vicinity of Pawtucket, where Canonchett had gathered a large force. Knowing nothing of the numbers of the enemy, Capt. Peirce crossed the river and attacked. He soon discovered that he could neither advance, nor retreat in orderly fashion, but by falling back to the river's bank might hold his ground long enough to make the attack a costly one for the Indians. Canonchett sent a large force across the river from a point above, to attack from the rear. Capt. Peirce then placed his men back to back, and they fought bravely until nearly every man was slain. Capt. Peirce fell early in the fray, but a few survivors, by various subterfuges, escaped to tell of the bravery of the little band. Scituate had eighteen men in the company,

The "Elbow," near Block House

and of this number fifteen were slain, most of them heads of families. Thomas Man returned sorely wounded, the only survivor whose name is known.

Scarcely had the news of the massacre reached home, when a call was received for a quota of fifty men from Scituate, to assemble at Plymouth on the 11th of April. At least four garrison houses, each with a force of twelve to fifteen men, had been established in various places for the safety of the settlers. One at John Williams' house, overlooking the harbor, a second at John Stockbridge's, beside the mills at Greenbush, for their defense, which was considered a vital necessity; the third was a "block house" of logs, at the beautiful "elbow" of the river just above Union Bridge. This block house was beside the old Indian path along the river bank, used by the Matakeesetts in passing from their settlement at the Indian Ponds in Pembroke to the shore for hunting and fishing. It stood in a small field, known today as the "block house field," north of the old "block house shipyard." The fourth garrison was at William Barstow's house, which stood about half way between the Third Herring Brook and Hanover's "Four Corners," at the

top of the hill on the east side of the road. There is a tradition that the old Rogers house in the "Two Mile," now the residence of Dr. Nelson, was a garrison house, and there are some features of its construction that suggest such a use. With a force of twelve in each garrison, at least fifty men were needed for home protection, and had Scituate sent its quota at the time appointed, the town would have been left at the mercy of the savages, for on the 21st of April a large body of Indians made a raid on Scituate, but were bravely repulsed by the inhabitants. Just a month later, on May 20th, another attack was made, and with more success. When the day was over, about half the homes in the south section of the town had been burned, and several settlers killed and wounded.

Hingham had been attacked on May 19th, several houses burned, and John Jacob, of Glad Tiding Plain, killed. The next morning they advanced over the old Massachusetts trail to that section of Hanover long known as "Drinkwater," at that time a part of Scituate. Here Cornet Robert Stetson had built a sawmill, antedating his other mill on the Third Herring Brook by several years. The fury of the Indians was especially directed to the mills. It may be because they were lovers of nature, and the destruction of the beautiful primeval forests, still used by them as hunting-grounds, although sold to the white men, was a source of resentment. It can hardly be expected that they understood the meaning of a deed of conveyance, or conceived the fact that their fine hunting-grounds might disappear before the axes of the settlers; but they must have reasoned that the destruction of the mills meant that the advance of the English would be delayed.

After burning the mill at Drinkwater, they proceeded to destroy that other mill built by the Cornet on the Third Herring Brook. The garrison at Barstow's had been reinforced by fourteen men from the Two Mile, and they avoided this position as they advanced, so that

the garrison saw only a scattered band which attempted to carry off a few horses and cattle. The mill on the brook at "Old Pond" was burned. This mill was never rebuilt, but traces of the old dam were discovered by the late Samuel Tolman, Esq., less than fifty years ago. After destroying the mill they burned two houses as they passed along down river: that of Joseph Sylvester, which stood on the site of the Waterman house, itself burned a few years ago, when owned by Capt. Edward Dixon; also the house of Robert Stetson, Jr., son of the Cornet, which probably stood on some part of the large grant made to his father in 1634, as nearly all of his sons settled around him on this property. Passing down the river by the old Matakeesett path, other houses were avoided, probably left to be destroyed on the return, after making the assault upon the garrison and mills at Stockbridge's. These were the homes of Cornet Stetson, Solomon Lincoln, William Brooks, William Curtis, Edward Wanton, and John Bryant, the last near the block house at the bend of the river. Another unsuccessful attempt was made to carry the block house, and John James, whose home was quite near it, was mortally wounded, and died a few weeks later.

Failing in their attempt upon the block house, they burned the home of William Blackmore, which stood on, or near, the site of "The May Elms." Blackmore, himself, had been killed in the April raid in the defense of his home. The next houses in their path were William Parker's and the hut of Nicholas Albeson, the "Sweede," on Parker's Lane, and Edward Wright's house, once Thomas Rawlins'. These houses were burned, but that of John Winter, on the site of Henry Ford's, at "Stony Brook Farm," was unmolested. Passing to the north after leaving Wright's, the Indians avoided the settlement between the Second Society's meeting-house and the river, and burned the homes of John Curtis and John Bumpas at Curtis, or Buttonwood Hill, and those of James Torrey, Widow Torrey, and John Buck, west of

Walnut Tree Hill. Henry Ewell's home was at the foot of Walnut Tree Hill, on the south, where a house now owned by John Wetherbee stands. In the house, on the morning of the raid, were Ewell's wife and her infant grandson, John Northey, the latter asleep in his cradle. Mrs. Ewell was busily employed with her week's baking, her loaves of bread ready for the oven; while placing them there, she heard the war-whoops of the Indians coming over the hill, her first indication of trouble. Thoroughly alarmed, she ran toward the garrison at Stockbridge's, forgetting, in her fright, the sleeping child. After warning the garrison of the approach of the Indians, she remembered the forgotten child, and by a circuitous route returned to find her home unharmed, the baby unawakened, and the only evidence of the Indians' visit, in the partly baked loaves pulled from the oven. Sometime later in the day the house was burned, as well as those of Sergeant Abram Sutliffe and Thomas Woodworth, both near at hand.

The assault on the mill and garrison at Stockbridge's was a determined one. Besides the garrison house, the mills were further defended by an out-work where the blacksmith shop now stands. The main position of the large Indian force was on the location of the Water Company's plant beside the pond. The fight lasted several hours, resulting in heavy losses to the Indians. Isaac Chittenden was killed, his the only name recorded of loss to the settlers at this place. The Indians were not dispersed until night fell, after all the remaining settlers had been gathered by Lieut. Buck from below, and by Cornet Stetson from the south section of the town, for the reinforcement of the garrison.

In the Hinckley papers, a letter from Gov. Josiah Winslow, bearing date of May 23, 1676, criticizes the inactivity of Scituate in not sending its quota of fifty men to Plymouth on the 11th of the month. The appalling disaster to Capt. Peirce and his company in December, the two raids on the town in April and May,

and the additional fact that twenty Scituate men, under Capt. Williams, were scouring the woods around Plymouth, is an answer to the criticism; while the letter having been written two days after the raid, shows that Gov. Winslow was unaware of the weak and desperate condition of the town when it was written.

After a short interval, Scituate was actively engaged in the pursuit of the Indians. Gen. Cudworth assumed command of the united forces of the colony; Lieut. Buck, and his brother Cornet John, were in uninterrupted service; Cornet Stetson is said to have been constantly on horseback attending to various duties, and giving aid and counsel. The following July, Capt. John Williams, whose company was chiefly composed of Scituate men, followed Philip to Mt. Hope, R. I., and commanded the right wing of the forces. The death of Philip, at Mt. Hope, brought the war in Massachusetts to an end, although fighting was carried on for nearly two years more in New Hampshire and Maine.

Stockbridge Mill Pond and House on Site of Garrison House

Site of the "Cornet's Mill"

Cornet Robert Stetson

THE career of Robert Stetson, of Scituate, the veteran "Cornet of the Troopers," is one of the most unique in the annals of Plymouth Colony, and the elements of romantic adventure running through his whole life appeal to everyone. In 1634, he made his appearance in Scituate, and soon after was granted a large tract of land on the banks of North River, where he built his rude home and reared his large family—but how and whence he came is still a mystery. So far as can be discovered, no other pioneer had established himself here at this early date, and it is believed that Robert Stetson was the first settler within the territory now known as Norwell.

We are told that he "was only a Cornet," that he "couldn't even write his name." Now if this be true — and there seems to be no evidence that it is not — is it not remarkable that he should have been chosen repeatedly to represent Scituate, at that time the wealthiest and most populous town in the colony (Plymouth not excepted), as their deputy to the Colony Court, and always with, or alternately with, such men as Gen. Cudworth, Lieut. James Torrey, and John Cushing, who were among the best-educated men in Scituate, or in the colony? Certain it is, that they shared the honor with the unlettered "Cornet of the Troopers" until he had served the town in this capacity for seventeen years—more than twice as long as any other deputy from Scituate. We must infer from this that he was a man of unusual ability, and that he had the confidence of the "freemen" of Scituate. As long as Cornet Stetson lived, he was — possibly with one exception — the only deputy chosen to represent at the Colony Court that part of Scituate now known as Norwell, Hanover, and the "Two Mile."

We do not know that the Cornet was connected with any church previous to the establishment of the Second Church in Scituate, but Rev. Wm. Wetherell, its first minister, having been ordained the previous month, baptized on October 6, 1645, the Cornet's three older sons. From that day to this, there has been no time when a considerable number of the Cornet's descendants were not prominently connected with this old church.

Cornet Stetson served on Scituate's first board of selectmen, and was continuously in the service of the town and colony. In 1653, he was chosen "foreman of the jury" that laid out many of the earlier roads, among these the "Countrey Road," from North River Bridge to Hingham, and the "Town Way," through the "Four Corners" to the Harbor. He was often employed by the colony in its dealings with the Indians, in the laying out of lands, and in the adjustment of perplexing situations.

We find him on the Colony Records constantly serving on important commissions with Maj. Josias Winslow, Colony Treasurer Constant Southworth, Maj. Wm. Bradford, Gen. Cudworth, and others, but have only space to mention briefly some of the most important instances. In 1655, Josias Winslow, Sr. (brother of Gov. Edward), Maj. Josias Winslow, Jr., Thomas Hinckley (later Governor), Mr. Wm. Clarke, and Cornet Stetson were appointed a committee "to regulate the disorders of the Gov'ment," and to "treat and conclude about settling of the trad att Kennebecke which was much interrupted by reason of trouble amongst the Indians." Later, this committee met with the (then) "farmers of the trad," *i. e.*, "Gov'r Prence, Mistris Allice Bradford Sen'r (the Governor's widow), Capt. Thomas Willet (a wealthy partner from Mass.), and Maj. Josias Winslow," to settle these difficulties. The next year (1660), Maj. Winslow, Capt. Thos. Southworth (Governor of Kennebecke Plantation), "The Treasurer," Cornet Stetson, and Josias Winslow, Sr., were "empowered to

act for the Countrey in all matters relating to the trad at Kennebecke." In 1663, "Cornet Studson" was appointed by the court "to accompany the treasurer in demanding and receiving the moneys due to the Countrey from the purchasers of Kennebecke," and for his trouble in settling the affairs of the troublesome Kennebecke Plantation, the Cornet received 200 acres of land in Drinkwater.

Previous to 1664, several unsuccessful attempts had been made to establish the boundary line between Plymouth Colony and Massachusetts Bay Colony. This was permanently established in 1664 by a commission from Massachusetts Bay, and Maj. Josias Winslow (later Governor), Capt. Constant Southworth (Colony Treasurer), and Cornet Stetson of Plymouth Colony.

In 1668, Cornet Stetson was commissioned by the Colony Court to purchase of Sachem Wampatucke (in his deed to the Cornet he takes his father's name, and styles himself Josias Chicatabutt, Sachem of Matakeesett) a six-mile tract, called by the Indians "Nan-umack-e-uitt," and afterwards known as the "Cornet's Purchase." This was south of the Hatherly grant, and now forms a part of Hanover, Rockland, Whitman, and Hanson. This locality is now known as Drinkwater. Mr. Barry, in his "History of Hanover," tells of the legend that the name Drinkwater was derived from the fact that no strong drink was used in raising the early mill, but we are fully convinced that *Drinkwater is simply the literal translation of the Indian name "Nanumackeuitt."* Over seven hundred acres of this tract eventually became the property of Cornet Stetson.

Inducements were early offered by the town of Scituate to anyone who would build a mill on the Third Herring Brook, and in 1656 the following was recorded in the Scituate Records:

"We whose names are underwritten doe testifye that we were with Robert Studson att worke the ninth of February, 1656, to provide Timber to build the sawmill that the said Robert Studson hath built."

This record was signed with the marks of Josepth Wormall, John Hudson, and Josepth Bearstow.

It is a fact not generally known, that at some time previous to January, 1674—possibly as early as 1657—Cornet Stetson also built a mill "at or near Indian Head River," for the Colony Court Records show that in *1674* Cornet Stetson recovered £3 10s from one Thomas Joy, of Hingham, "for saying and repeating since January last past that the sawmill of Cornet Robert Studson, which standeth in Plymouth Collonie neare Scituate, standeth upon his, the said Joy's land . . . whereby the said Studson comes to be greatly damnified." Fifty-four years later, in 1727, the town of Hanover was incorporated embracing the site of this mill.

This plant, known as "Drinkwater Mill," was much more extensive than that on the Third Herring Brook, and the Cornet sold it in 1680 for "300£ currant silver money" to four enterprising colonists, viz., "Ralph Powel of Marshfield, planter, Chas. Stockbridge of Scituate, millwright, Isaac Barker of Duxborough, planter, and Robert Barker of Duxborough, planter." We have not space here for these deeds, but copies of the deed of Nanumackeuitt to Cornet Stetson by Wampatucke in 1668, Thomas Joy's gift deed from Wampatuck in 1668, the verdict for the Cornet against Thos. Joy in 1674, and the Cornet's deed of the mill to the freemen in 1680, may all be seen in "Stetson Kindred of America," Vol. 5.

We have spoken of this mill at length, as we believe it of much importance in connection with the early history of Scituate and Hanover, and none of the local historians thus far seem to have had any definite knowledge of it. We also believe its establishment previous to 1674 antedates by many years any other business enterprise within the present limits of Hanover.

In 1656, the Colony Court, realizing that the horsemen of the various towns should be organized for the protection of the colony, ordered raised a "troop of horse."

Gov. Bradford's son William was made Captain, Gov. Prence's son-in-law, John Freeman, was made Lieutenant, and Robert Stetson, Cornet. This troop at once became the most valuable company in the colony.

Many years afterwards, before the breaking out of King Philip's War, Major (afterwards Governor) Josiah Winslow, and Gov. Bradford's two step-sons — *i. e.*, Capt. Thomas Southworth and Colony Treasurer Constant Southworth — were chosen commissioners to visit Philip at Mt. Hope — "to beard the lion in his den," and if possible turn him from his purpose of exterminating the colonists. Cornet Stetson and the troopers were sent with this commission, and although the Cornet was well past his prime, evidently he still led the troopers. The following, from the Colony Records, we believe to be the only official record of this expedition:

"To Captaine Southworth for his paines and time forty shillings.

"To the treasurer respecting his *long* time and paines three pounds.

"To Cornet Robert Studson his horse time and paines forty shillings.

"Two shillings and sixpense a day is allowed unto the troopers to each of them that went on the abovesaid expedition, viz.; to each of them and his horse." (Col. Rec.)

Although a Captain is supposed to outrank a Cornet, we note that the Cornet and Captain Southworth received the same compensation.

Cornet Stetson was a member of the "Council of War" for a period of over twenty years, including King Philip's War. Rev. Samuel Deane, the historian, was ordained over the Second Church of Scituate more than one hundred years ago; he was a conscientious student of local history, and at a time when traditions were of much value, he wrote: "During Philip's War, the veteran Cornet Stetson was constantly on horseback, either in making voluntary expeditions with Gen. Cudworth (as tradition asserts) or in returning to encourage the garrisons at home, or in guiding the Council of War."

We well remember our youthful conception of Cornet Stetson, *i. e.*, a valiant horseman mounting a fierce

Sergeant Samuel Stetson House

steed, a sort of knight errant who roamed the forest, seeking adventures with the Indians. Of course we subsequently came to know that most of his dealings with the Indians were of a peaceful nature; nevertheless we can at least think of him as a sturdy horseman, for his home was a long way from his mills, the church, and the harbor, and his constant service as deputy to Plymouth, commissioner, and Cornet of the troopers, must have kept him constantly in the forest, often with no companion save his faithful horse.

In 1847, Rev. John Stetson Barry wrote the "Records of the Stetson Family." A revised edition of this work is now in preparation, hence any extended account of the Cornet's family is unnecessary. His family consisted of seven boys and two girls, — Joseph, Benjamin, Thomas, Samuel, John, Eunice, Lois, Robert, and Timothy. Seven of these survived, married, settled near the old homestead, and reared large families. We would like to tell of these children and their homes — of the part they took in the affairs of Scituate, of their many distinguished descendants in all parts of the country, who have a kindly interest in Scituate as the early home of their ancestors, but for lack of room this is impossible.

The once prosperous settlement that surrounded the Cornet's old home by the river has been gradually changing all these years, until now the locality is fast approaching the primeval state in which the Cornet found it, nearly three centuries ago. To the north, evidences of the homestead of Sergt. Humphrey Johnson (1651) have entirely disappeared — the garden spot now grown a forest, the site, even, known only to the few. To the south, where were the homes of Capt. Benjamin, and David Bryant, and "the shipyard at Bald Hill," nature again has full possession. Following the uplands near the edge of the meadows, half a mile back from the nearest town way, much overgrown and hardly distinguishable, is the ancient road that connected these homesteads.

Nearly three hundred years have passed since Robert Stetson and Honor encamped on the banks of North River, and the name Stetson is now extinct in the towns of Norwell and Scituate; yet incredible though it seems, it is nevertheless true, as the vital records will demonstrate, that more than half of the inhabitants of Norwell, even today, are descendants of this ancient couple.

Cornet Stetson died in the year 1702-03, at the age of ninety years, having lived for *sixty-eight years in Scituate, during which time he was unquestionably the leading citizen of the south part of Scituate, now known as Norwell;* for it will be remembered that Mr. Hatherly, Gen. Cudworth, James Torrey, and John Cushing all lived in the north part of the town.

A society of Cornet Stetson's descendants, known as the "Stetson Kindred of America," has been organized, with Francis Lynde Stetson, of New York City, as President, and the late John B. Stetson, of Philadelphia, as Vice-president. These gentlemen purchased and presented to the organization the Cornet's old homestead and forty-six acres of the original farm, although the original house was demolished more than one hundred and fifty years ago. Here at the "shrine," the home of their ancestor, his descendants from all parts of the country meet annually, drink from the "Cornet's spring," and spend a day on the spot where 283 years ago Robert Stetson first brought Honor, his wife, built his rude home, and laid the foundation of the Stetson family of America, and the town of South Scituate (now Norwell).

Mann Hill

RICHARD MAN came with his wife, Rebecca, from England about 1644. He took the "oath of fidelitie" in Scituate, January 15, 1644. Deane says, in the "History of Scituate," that Richard Man came in the *Mayflower* in the family of Elder Brewster; but it has been proved that this is incorrect, and that his name was confused with that of Richard More, but we know that he was one of the Conihasset Partners in 1646.

When Timothy Hatherly divided the Conihasset Grant among the twenty-six partners, Richard Man was one of them. In the Colony Records under date of November 15, 1655, Richard Man was one of twelve men "impanelled and sworn to looke on the body of the daughter of William Pakes by appointment of me, Timothy Hatherly." "We find William Pakes his well to be very dangerous as both in that it lyes at the foot of a hill as also having noe fence aboute it to preserve a child from shooting or tumbling in — so the child tumbling or falling in the water was the cause of the death of Thankful Pakes."

"They whose names are underwritten were panelled on a quest of enquiry about the death of Richard Man, by me Timothy Hatherly. Sworne, Matthew Briggs, William Pakes, Ensign John Williams, Jonathan Whitcomb, Sergeant Gilbert Brooks, Thomas Ensign, Jeremy Hatch, Stephen Vinal, Rodolphus Ellms, Robert Whitcomb, Gowin White, John Hoar."

PAR-VERDICT

"Wee find that by coming over the pond from his owne house towards the farms that he brake through the iyce and was in soe deep that he could not get out and by reason of the cold of the weather and the water made him unable to healp himself, neither could any other psent aford him any healp that could healp him out, though they used their best endeavor for the space of about an hour as is reported to us by the witnesses that saw him, at which time he died. This was found to bee the cause of his death as wee all judge."

"The Court further ordered Mr. Hatherly to inquire into the estate of Richard Man, late deceased att Scituate March 5, 1655, the widow made application to administer the estate. Granted May 6, following Apprisal April 14, 1655.

"1 dwelling house & barn & 43 acres of upland, 13 acres of marsh & 1 share of Conihasset land, 2 oxen, 1 heifer, 2 steers, 3 yearlings, 3 bu. barley & 36 bu. wheat, 1 pair shoes, 1 bu. Malt, 1 bed, 2 old blankets, 1 rugg, 1 warming pan, 2 spinning wheels, 1 iron kittle, 1 iron pot, 1 iron skillet, 2 frying pans, 1 little kittle, 1 skillet, 1 pr. of tongues, 1 cradle, 2 old pitchforks, & 1 pr. cards, a bible & other

books, 1 plow, 2 ax, 2 hammers & hoe, 2 pieces bacon, small shot gun, 4 old chairs, & pr. of ballences, 1 Sabbath short coat. (All valued at about $75.) Appraisers James Cudworth & Walter Briggs. May 6, 1656, Rebecca Man, wife of Richard Man, deceased, doth give her 3 youngest children to each of them 5 pounds & Cap. Cudworth standeth bound to see the same performed out of the estate of sd. Richard Man." (Plym. Col. Rec.)

Rebecca Man, widow of Richard Man, married John Cowen the last of March, 1656, and they lived in Richard Man's house till 1670. (Plym. Col. Rec.) John Cowen is said to have been from Scotland; he bought lands in Conihasset north of Sweet Swamp, now the Peirce farm, and his house stood where the old Warren and Stephen Litchfield house stood until it was bought and moved by Mrs. Lucy Peirce Nichols.

In 1671, John Cowen was indicted at court by Governor Prence for speaking contemptible words against the royal dignity of England in that "hee said hee scorned to bee in subjection to any Englishman & that there never was any a king England but one crooked backed Richard,— a crooked rogue just like 'such an one' that he names,— viz. a crooked man well-known in the town of Scituate." The case was tried and the jury brought in not guilty.

Richard Man was a farmer, and his neighbor on the south was John Hoar, who early removed to Concord, and was the ancestor of the great men of that name in that town. Richard Man's farm was bounded east by the ocean and on the north by Musquashcut Pond, while still farther north were the "Farms," so called.

In 1670, Nathaniel Man, eldest son of Richard, sued his father-in-law, John Cowen, before the selectmen of Scituate, for "using & improving his house & lands" without his order. He was given 89 shillings damages. He appealed to "His Majestie's Court," but the appeal was not pleaded. It is evident he received the house, since in 1680 Nathaniel Man made over his estate to his brothers, Thomas and Richard, Thomas having signed a bond for the support of Nathaniel on account of infirm health.

July 21, 1688, Nathaniel Man died suddenly. The verdict was:

"We doe find that the sd. Nathaniel Man hath formerly been troubled with fitts his falling sickness & sometimes hath been distracted & out of his witts heretofore & on the 19th of July at evening at the house of his brother Thomas Man at Conihasset in Scituate aforesaid grievously distracted or Lunatized & in a raging manner so continued till break of day & then ran out of the house & tore his clothes off & ran away in the said distracted frame & on the 20th inst. was found in the searf of the sea between high water mark & low water mark amongst a body of Rocks lying against Little Pond & was dead that he running amongst the sd. Rocks they being very slippery did fall upon some of them & wounded his head whereof he died."

Thomas Man, second son of Richard, was the only survivor whose name is known of the ill-fated company of Capt. Michael Peirce annihilated at Attleboro Gore, near Pawtucket, in King Philip's War.

Priscilla Man, a granddaughter of the original Richard, was a well-educated teacher, familiarly called "Marm Mann." Her penmanship, of which specimens still exist, was of great excellence. Here is an extract from a letter of hers to her niece, a daughter of Ensign Man:

"A constant correspondence with your father was of use to me; he was my monitor; — he bid me beware the intrigues of the world, — to cautiously retain my own secrets."

About matrimony she wrote:

"I ever had a niceness in my choice and could as soon have ceased to live as to have married a man in whose character or conduct I discovered material defects. I early resolved upon a single life. My occupation gave me an unwished for foreknowledge of the married world. Thus much for my being single. I would advise all girls who marry, to look for partners of steady habits, good tempers, prudence, and a sense of the moral obligations of religion."

In a letter to her brother Ensign, who was a Tory, she says, June 25, 1814:

"Your British friends have landed at Scituate Harbor, burnt and carried off the vessels, — we have frequent alarms but your good governor [Caleb Strong, a classmate of Ensign's at Harvard College] can't spare any cannon for fortifying, so the artillery and soldiers turn out when called for. If the pious Old Gentleman don't act a little more like a *man*, his Tory friends will get mad at him. One of the redhot Tories at the Harbor was the greatest loser. His loss was estimated at $5,000, and we find they flinch when property is touched *just like other folks*. I know how little you will relish this

letter, but in brotherly kindness you will pass it over, since my scolding will do neither good nor hurt to your favorites."

Another letter, in 1820:

"I board at Perez Jacobs', son of David Jacobs, and have made it my residence for three years past in the old mansion house that used to be a tavern. I am handy to the meeting when I choose to attend."

She began to teach at the age of sixteen and taught fifty years, part of the time at Assinippi. She used to say that all she knew about cooking was to spread her own bread and butter. Her independence of character is illustrated by the changing of the spelling of her name from Man to Mann. She wrote deeds, conveyances, and contracts. She was large and tall, very stout, and good-looking, and could converse on any subject. She was a member of the Universalist Church of Assinippi, and Father Ballou, as he was called from being one of the fathers of the Universalist denomination, said of her: "She was a superior woman, she had few equals and no superiors." She died at Assinippi, formerly West Scituate, in 1831, at the age of 84, and was buried in the cemetery there. By her own request, no gravestone has been placed over her grave.

Early Industries

INDUSTRIES in the early days were limited to the necessities of existence, as human brains evolved substitutes for the supplies of the old countries. Farming on a small scale, hunting wild animals for food and skins, and fishing were the first employments. There were skilled men among the colonists who, with the energy of the race to which they belonged, began at once to utilize the materials at hand for comfort and convenience. Money being almost unknown after their arrival here, their wants were in a measure supplied by an exchange of surplus commodities called "barter," a custom kept up to this day by a few families in country towns who exchange eggs, wood, butter, and vegetables for groceries at the nearest store.

One of the first needs of the colonists was clothing, and the furs of such animals as could be obtained were soon made into garments — caps, hoods, and capes. Many of the colonists had knowledge of spinning and weaving — looms were set up, and "fullers" of cloth built mills for fulling and making the cloth fit for clothing. Among the first to do this was George Lewis, 1634, but it is not known that he started a mill. James Torrey started, in 1653, a fulling mill on First Herring Brook, a short distance above the Stedman mill on the pond, the first clothing mill in the colony. In 1690, it was the property of Capt. Samuel Clap, and Capt. John Clap owned it in 1750, when it was spoken of as a "grist and fulling mill."

Thomas Ingham, a weaver, lived on the south side of Stockbridge's mill pond in 1640. In 1663, according to the Colony Records, he was "presented" at the Colony Court "for retaining yarn from those who brought it to be woven," but at the trial he was cleared. He and his wife were notorious as being accused of witchcraft, and having bewitched Mehitabel Woodworth. The offense

was not proven. Thomas Chittenden, 1633, is also called a weaver. Spinning and weaving were largely home industries for more than two hundred years after the first settlement. In the eighteenth century, wool and flax were produced in large quantities, and the houses were filled with the products of the hand looms. Towels, napkins, and sheets were made of the flax after the finest patterns; also large table-cloths, which were finished with fine fringe; while woolen sheets were much needed in the cold houses, as well as woolen garments, which included the striped blankets so commonly worn over the shoulders and heads of our grandmothers. Then there were the blue and white, or brown and white, bedquilts — the warp of linen, and the woof of home-dyed wool. The beautiful patterns were often heirlooms, handed down from mother to daughter, and probably brought with them from their English homes.

Warm shoes for the feet were necessary in the severe winters, and from the skins of the wild animals shot by the hunters for food and for protection came the material for their manufacture. To make use of these skins a tanner was needed, and here was Humphrey Turner, an English tanner, who erected a tannery on his farm east of Colman's Hills, traces of which have been found very recently. This was started as early as 1636. His son John Turner, the first to settle on North River, started a tannery there, on an "island" near the river bank, where his house was located.

Capt. Benjamin Tolman was a tanner, and his tannery was northeast of Church Hill, on "Tannery Brook," so called, about 1700. His son-in-law Joseph Copeland succeeded him in his house and tannery, and was in his turn succeeded by his son Ebenezer Copeland, who married the widow of Thomas Waterman. Ebenezer Copeland's daughter Huldah married James Waterman, who in his turn conducted the tannery. The house built by Captain Tolman is now standing, and was owned until a recent date by Ebenezer C. Waterman, son of James.

Capt. Stephen Otis left by will, in 1729, to his son Ensign, "Tan House and Tan Pits" situated near home of Captain Stephen.

As late as 1825 to 1830, Nathaniel Turner had a tannery on the east side of the road at the foot of Brushy Hill, on a small brook known as the "Tan Brook." It was not built by Turner, but it was sold by him to Luther Curtis, and discontinued in 1840.

Cooking utensils and household dishes were undoubtedly very rare in the settlement, as there were only those brought on the first ships. The colonists were familiar with wooden dishes, and many were turned by the *turners* in England. Whether the *Turners* of Scituate turned dishes is not reported, but the first Charles Turner had spoon moulds, in which were moulded the pewter spoons used by the family. One of these moulds was presented to the New England Historic Genealogical Society by Hon. Samuel Adams Turner.

The only pottery mentioned in Scituate was established in 1730 by an Irishman named John Neil, on the south side of Wild Cat Hill. At a later period he had a pottery on the north side of Studley Hill. He removed to Maine in 1760.

The first places where it is known that bricks were made were: at the west of Colman's Hills; at Church Hill, near John Palmer's; in 1700, near Henchman's Corner; in 1770, southwest of Cordwood Hill, later known as George Torrey's Hill; on the west side of Hoop Pole Hill, and on the west side of Mt. Blue. In 1820, the Jacobs and Collamores manufactured them extensively on the south side of Jacobs Pond. This was probably the last place where bricks were made within the limits of the town.

The Vassalls at Belle House Neck

NO fairer view of hill and dale, of river, forest, and ocean, can be found than that from the hills on the Marshfield and Scituate sides of North River, near Little's Bridge. The removal of Colman Hills, the "high hills" of the early records, gradual at first, but now showing rapid progress, is taking much of the beauty from the view looking from Marshfield, as well as destroying some historic sites, for it was around the southern side of the hills that a portion of the early settlement was made.

Mr. William Vassall was among the number who came into Scituate in 1634 and 1635, although he was not a member of Mr. Lothrop's church. He was a man of considerable fortune, and of some importance both in England and in the Massachusetts Colony. A most beautiful tract of land on the river was granted him, by far the largest tract allotted to any one settler. It contained more than 150 acres, and Vassall began at once his plantation, which he called "West Newland." The house that he built in 1635 upon the beautiful slope of upland, commanding a glorious view of the rising sun across green meadows, was named "Belle House," the "house beautiful." It deserved its name most truly, from its outlook.

William and Samuel Vassall were original patentees of New England lands. They were sons of John Vassall, an alderman of London, a man of great wealth, who in 1588 fitted out and commanded two vessels which he gave to the British Navy, to help oppose the Spanish Armada. William and Samuel were officers of the Massachusetts Company in London. It is said that Samuel, at one time, was the owner of the *Mayflower*. His monument in King's Chapel, Boston, was erected in 1766 by his great-grandson. He never came to New England, but removed early to Barbadoes.

William Vassall was one of Craddock's assistants, at the time that he was made acting governor of the Massachusetts Company in London, and John Endicott had been sent to govern affairs on this side. His first direct knowledge of Massachusetts lands was in 1630, when he came to New England with John Winthrop, returning to London in the ship *Lyon* in 1631. He was on this side of the Atlantic when complaints were made by the colonists against Endicott's government, and the settlers chose him and his brother Samuel as their referees to present their petition to Craddock in England. He must have been favorably impressed by the probable future of the colonies, for he returned in June, 1635, embarking with his wife and six children in the ship *Blessing*, with the intention of making a home in the new lands toward the west. Leaving his family in Roxbury, he erected his home upon his new plantation, "West Newland," the year of his arrival. He found Scituate a home greatly to his liking, and became a member of Mr. Lothrop's church. While there was more or less controversy in the church during the next three or four years, Mr. Vassall seems to have taken little active part in it. He was a well educated man, and had thought deeply on matters that were causing religious disagreement both in England and in the colonies.

When the Reverend Charles Chauncey was settled as Mr. Lothrop's successor in 1641, Mr. Vassall soon found himself in great disfavor with his new pastor, who would endure no opposition to views that he felt his talents and learning should make acceptable to his parishioners without too much questioning on their part. Mr. Vassall's powers of persuasive argument may have been quite as much a factor in his disfavor as the ideas that he entertained, for he was quite the equal of his new pastor in religious argument, and drew to his opinions many other church members, as well as a number of new settlers who were taking up lands upon

the river. The "Second Church of Christ" in Scituate was formed in Vassall's house on February 2, 1642.

William Vassall had much to do with public affairs in the town. The earliest records extant are in his beautiful handwriting, and that of Edward Foster, as no town clerk was appointed until 1636. He held no office in the Colonial Government, perhaps by disinclination, but more likely because his opinions, both religious and social, were greatly in advance of his time. In this relation, Deane says: "It is worthy of remark, that most of the principles held by such men as Cudworth, Hatherly, Vassall and Roger Williams, for which they suffered the persecutions of the early Colonial Governments, were such principles of civil and religious liberty as are now recognized to be the truest and best."

Once embroiled in controversy, Mr. Vassall's argumentative disposition kept him in more or less trouble for the next few years. He espoused the cause of the people of Hingham in their protest against a decision of the court relative to their choice of a captain of the town militia, and in 1646 was sent to England as one of their emissaries to present this protest to the government there. He met with no success on his errand, and finding himself out of sympathy with colonial leaders, joined his brother Samuel in Barbadoes, in 1648, without returning to Scituate. He died in the Parish of St. Michael's in 1655, leaving a will in which his son, Capt. John Vassall, was named executor.

His daughter Judith married Resolved White, of the first *Mayflower* company, in 1640. That year a grant of 100 acres of marsh and upland on the southeast side of Belle House Neck was made to White by order of the court. They resided on this tract until 1662, the year of the sale of the Vassall estate, and then removed to Marshfield, near his brother Peregrine, on the South River.

Frances Vassall married James Adams, 1646, whose mother, widow of John Adams, of the *Fortune* (1621), had married Kenelm Winslow. James Adams' farm

was upon the Marshfield side of the river, at or near that of the late Enos Stoddard. Mention is found of another daughter, name not given, who married Nicholas Ware in Virginia. They had removed to Barbadoes before her father's death, in 1655, and Ware's name is connected with the sale of the Belle House Neck property.

Capt. John Vassall, son of William, removed to Boston about 1652 or 1653, where he became a householder. He sold his Boston home, and went with a company of settlers to Cape Fear, North Carolina. The settlement came to dire straits, and in 1657 Capt. Vassall applied to the Massachusetts Colony for relief to be sent to himself and his followers. He had not returned to Massachusetts in 1662, if he ever did so. Capt. John was born about 1625. He bore arms in Scituate in 1643, at the age of eighteen, and in 1652 was a lieutenant under Cudworth. While he remained in Scituate, although a young man, he was associated in town affairs with such men as John Hoar and John Saffin, as selectmen, or "overseers." By reason of his absence in 1655, at his father's death, his brother-in-law, Nicholas Ware, of Barbadoes, with the consent of the other heirs, appointed Capt. Joshua Hubbard, of Hingham, attorney for the sale of the Scituate estate. In 1662, Hubbard conveyed 120 acres, with house and barns, to "John Cushen and Mathyas Briggs" for £120. No one bearing the Vassall name remained in Scituate, unless the ancestry of Benjamin Vassall, now untraced, can be traced back to some son of William. Benjamin was born in 1742, and was brought up in the family of a Mr. Vinal, in Scituate. In early life he learned the trade of cabinet maker, and later removed to Charlton, Mass. Benjamin Vassall was a soldier of the Revolution from Scituate.

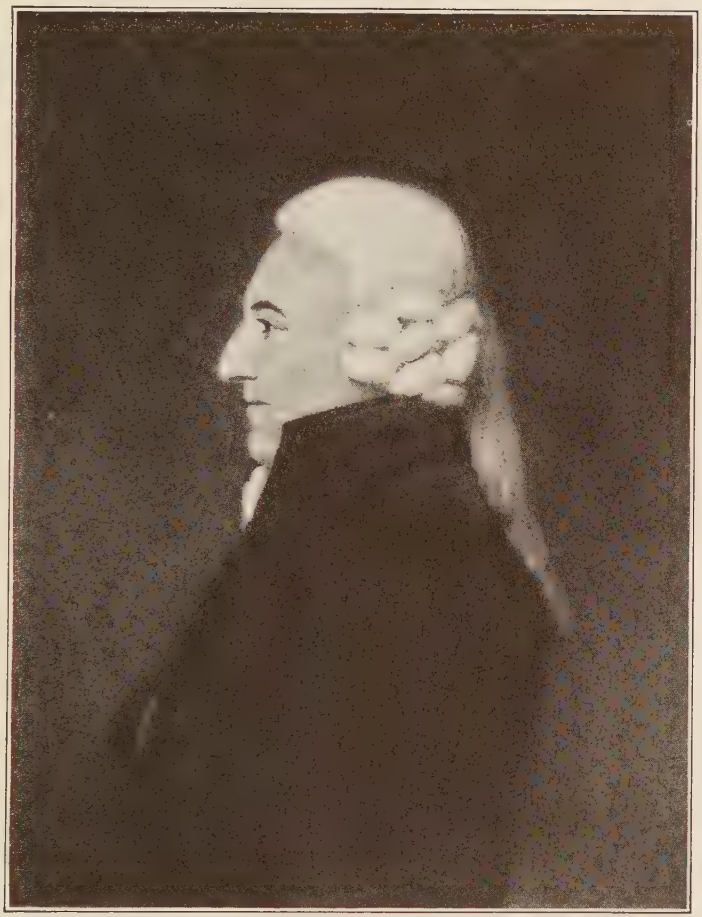
After Jamaica was taken by the British, the Vassalls made large fortunes in Barbadoes. The family life in St. Michael's was one of lavish magnificence, combined with the crudest service. English visitors were shocked by the attire of the negro servants, who waited on

tables loaded with silver plate, in the scantiest of clothing, and that often in tatters.

There were many Vassalls living in and around Boston at the time of the Revolution. They were descendants of Samuel, and not of his brother William, as conjectured by Deane. Capt. Leonard Vassall, whose fine estate on Summer Street on the site of Hovey's store extended to Chauncy Street, was a grandson of Samuel, and was the builder of the Adams house, near President's Bridge, at Quincy. Capt. Leonard's son, Col. John, was the builder of the Craigie-Longfellow house at Cambridge. Another son, Henry Vassall, married Penelope Royall, of the Royall House, in Medford. William Vassall, third son of Col. John, was the builder of the famous Gardiner-Greene mansion on Pemberton Hill, Boston, demolished in 1835. Another son, John, married Elizabeth Oliver, and lived on the "Elmwood" estate in Cambridge.

All the Vassalls were Loyalists, and fled the country with the British forces when Boston was evacuated. Their properties were confiscated and sold, and some of them died in poverty. Thomas Coffin Amory, in "A Boston of the Olden Time," says: "Numerous descendants of Leonard Vassall by female lines remain among us, distinguished by ancestral traits. But the name has for the most part perished, unless where perpetuated in the line of sable dependants, who had assumed that of their masters, as was customary in days when one man could be bondsman to another."

The Vassall house at Belle House Neck, Scituate, purchased in 1662 by John Cushing, is said to have been neither large nor imposing, but it housed the Cushings of three generations, and was the birthplace of Chief Justice William in 1732. In 1742, Judge John Cushing, 2d, built the house now standing on the property, the home of Roger Sherman Dix. It was owned by the descendants of John Cushing, fourth of the name, elder half-brother of Judge William, until its sale in 1842 to David Briggs, from whose son it was purchased by Mr. Dix.



Judge William Cushing

The "Family of Judges"

Chief Justice William Cushing

THE life of Chief Justice William Cushing is that of one of no mere local celebrity, for the distinguished service given by him to state and nation places him on the list of the founders of the Federal Government.

William Cushing was born in Scituate, on March 1, 1732, of distinguished ancestry. He was a descendant of Matthew Cushing, of Hingham, through his son John, who came to Scituate in 1662, having purchased the Belle House Neck estate from the heirs of William Vassall. So many judges have borne the Cushing name, that it has been called the "Family of Judges," and the first John Cushing, the "Father of Judges." William's father and grandfather, the latter the eldest son of the first John, were Judges of the Provincial Courts. His grandfather, Judge John, Sr., was called by a contemporary, John Cotton, "the life and soul of the Court." Both father and son were Judges of the Superior Court of Massachusetts, the latter retiring in 1772, to be succeeded by his son William.

William Cushing was prepared for college by Richard Fitzgerald, of Scituate, and graduated from Harvard College in 1751. He was Master of the Roxbury Grammar School for a time, and later studied law under the celebrated Jeremy Gridley, of Cambridge, an Attorney General of the Province. He began the practice of law in his native town, often accompanying his father upon his circuits.

His brother Charles, after graduating from Harvard, had gone to Pownalborough (afterwards divided into the towns of Dresden and Wiscasset), where tradition says his father had large grants of land. York was the only county in what is now the State of Maine, until Lincoln County was established, in 1768, with Pownalborough for the shire town. At that time there was no house on the Kennebec River from two miles above the county-seat to the settlements of Canada, except Fort Western, at Augusta, and Fort Halifax, at Winslow, the whole country being a wilderness. William Cushing followed his brother Charles to this frontier town, and was for some years the only college-bred lawyer there. In 1768, he was appointed Judge of Probate of Lincoln County, at the age of twenty-eight, and spent the next

twelve years of his life in Pownalborough. In 1772, his father resigned his position as Associate Judge of the Superior Court of Judicature, and William was appointed his successor. He returned to the Scituate home, at Walnut Tree Hill, and in 1774 married Hannah Phillips, taking his young bride to the home of his widowed father, presided over since the death of his wife by his unmarried daughter Abigail. This house was destined to be their only home, in which they resided for a few months each year, as Madam Cushing always accompanied her husband upon his circuits, a mode of living made possible because there were no children born of the marriage. In January, 1792, she wrote to a relative of the Judge: "The time draws nigh for us to quit home, and not to return until May. We are traveling machines, and no abiding place in every sense of the word."

William Cushing's appointment as a Supreme Court Justice under the Crown came just before the outbreak of the Revolution. At this time he closely guarded his opinions, and as a Judge strictly abstained from taking any part in political discussions until the hour came for him properly to declare himself. He did this in drafting the resolutions of the town of Scituate, in June, 1776, for the instruction of its Representative, Nathan Cushing. Judge Cushing was the only member of the King's bench who supported the independence and separation of the colonies from the mother country, and when the courts were reorganized, in 1775, was the only Justice of the Provincial Court who was retained in judicial position. "The position of administering justice in a province in rebellion was no holiday affair. It was a post of extreme peril. . . . Courage and deep conviction must have dictated his course." *

In 1777, he was appointed Chief Justice of the Superior Court of Judicature, and labored with success in placing

* From address given before the Scituate Historical Society, August 30, 1919, by Chief Justice Arthur P. Rugg, of the Supreme Judicial Court.

that court upon a firm and substantial basis. One important duty was the charge to the Grand Jury, then more highly thought of than at the present. Few of his charges are on record, for at the time there were no written opinions. His most important charge on record while on the Massachusetts bench was given at Worcester in April, 1783. The particulars are interesting. Slavery had been tolerated in the province, and when Massachusetts became a state, a phrase of the Constitution adopted in 1780 omitted the words which disfranchised "negroes, Indians, and Mulattoes," and gave the right of suffrage to "every male person being twenty-one years of age" and possessed of a certain amount of property "being free," etc. A negro by the name of Quaco, otherwise known as Quork Walker, born in slavery, put this to the test. He had been sold at the age of nine months, together with his father and mother, to a Mr. Caldwell, who promised Quaco his freedom at the age of twenty-five, while his widow promised it earlier, when Quaco should be twenty-one. The widow Caldwell married Nathaniel Jennison, of Barre, Mass., and after his wife's death, the husband claimed Quaco as a part of her estate. When Quaco came of age, he ran away from Jennison, was overtaken, beaten, and imprisoned for two hours. John Caldwell, a brother of his first master, in whose employ he was when seized, came to his assistance, and Quaco was given legal advice. The case was first tried in the Court of Common Pleas, and the jury awarded the negro a verdict of £50. The case was appealed, and finally came before the Supreme Court. The full bench of Chief Justice and three Associate Justices presided over the trial. Chief Justice Cushing's charge to the grand jury is on record. He said in part:

"As to the doctrine of slavery, and the right of Christians to hold Africans in perpetual servitude, and sell and treat them as we do our horses and cattle, that (it is true) has been heretofore countenanced by the Province laws formerly, but nowhere is it expressly enacted or established. It has been a usage which took its origin from some

European nations, and the regulations of the British Government respecting the then Colonies, for the benefit of trade and wealth. But whatever sentiments have formerly prevailed in this particular, or slid upon us by the example of others, a different idea has taken place with the people of America, more favorable to the natural right of mankind, and to that natural, innate desire of Liberty, with which Heaven (without regard to color, complexion or shape of noses, features) has inspired all the human race. And upon this ground our Constitution of Government, by which the people of this Commonwealth have solemnly bound themselves, sets out with declaring all men are born free and equal — and that every subject is entitled to liberty — and to have it guarded by the laws, as well as life and property — and in short is totally repugnant to the idea of being born slaves. This being the case, I think the idea of slavery is inconsistent with our own conduct and Constitution; and there can be no such thing as perpetual servitude of a rational creature, unless his liberty is forfeited by criminal conduct, or given up by personal consent or contract."

It was this far reaching judicial opinion which abolished slavery in the State of Massachusetts. To the lately published "Outlines of History," by H. G. Wells, there is appended a table of leading events from 800 B. C. to 1920 A. D. Between 1780 and 1787, one finds but two events chronicled: 1783, Treaty of Peace between Britain and the new United States of America; and second, Quaco, the slave freed in Massachusetts. In the volume preceding, one reads: "In that year [1783] the soil of Massachusetts became like the soil of Britain, intolerant of slavery; to tread upon it was to become free." At that time no other state in the Union followed this example. In the census of 1790, Massachusetts alone of all the states returned "no slaves."

The chaos that existed in this Commonwealth between the close of the Revolution and the establishment of the Federal Government made the position of a judge of any court one of extreme peril. In a sketch written by his grand-nephew, Charles Cushing Paine,* it is said:

"The Courts and Judges were subjected during these times to great annoyances, and occasionally to much personal danger; frequently the court houses were surrounded and filled by people armed and highly excited, and the Judges were refused admittance at the inns, or food either for themselves or their horses. One occasion, in particular, has often been mentioned, when the Judges were exposed to imminent hazard of their lives. On arriving at the inn of a town where the court was to be held, they found the whole intervening

* See Flanders' "Lives and Times of the Chief Justices."

space to the court house filled by a mob of many hundred, armed, and resolved to prevent the opening of the court. The Chief Justice [Cushing] was applied to by a committee from the mob, and entreated to yield to their wishes; he replied, that the law appointed the court to be held at that time, and it was their duty to hold it accordingly; and followed by his Associates, he proceeded into the street. His countenance was blanched to paleness, but his step was firm. As he advanced, the crowd opened before him, but slowly and sullenly; muskets rattled, and some bayonets rapped upon his breast; quietly and firmly, however, he moved on, reached the court house, and the court was regularly opened. The respect and affection universally borne towards him contributed, without doubt, in no slight degree, to preserve the public support to the courts, and maintained their authority in this crisis."

In 1780, Chief Justice Cushing was a member of the Convention that framed the Constitution of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts; in 1788, he was Vice-President of the State Convention that ratified the Constitution of the United States, and presided at many of its meetings.

When the Federal Government was organized in 1789, the Chief Justice of Massachusetts was selected as one of the Justices of the Supreme Court, the first Associate Justice named by Washington. As senior Associate Justice, Judge Cushing administered the oath of office to Washington at his second inaugural in March, 1793, because of the absence of Chief Justice Jay as envoy to the Court of Great Britain. This was the first time this ceremony had been performed.

The duties of the Supreme Court Justices were not heavy at first; the most arduous task was the traveling made necessary by the extent of the different circuits, which extended from Falmouth (Portland), Me., to Augusta, Ga. The distances were covered by Judge Cushing in a traveling chaise drawn by two horses, driven by the Judge, while Prince, his colored serving-man, followed in a lighter vehicle containing his own and Madam Cushing's luggage. On long circuits, and during the winter and spring months, another colored servant, Scipio, accompanied them on horseback, riding ahead, over the muddy roads, to see if the bridges were safe, before attempting to cross them. It is said that

Madam Cushing would always alight and walk across the bridges, never trusting herself to their uncertain strength. In a letter to a relative, living some thirty or forty miles from Atlanta, dated at Atlanta, November 17, 1793, Judge Cushing writes:

"Mrs. Cushing and I should have done ourselves the pleasure of a short visit at your home had time and circumstance permitted; but I am obliged to hasten off to-morrow to Wake, N. C., a space of 300 miles, to hold court there the last of this month, and having travelled a journey of 1300 miles already with a pair of horses in a phaeton, somewhat encumbered with necessary baggage, it will be as much as we can do to reach Wake in season."

In the same letter he speaks of other relatives:

"whom we have thought of calling to see in our progress to the northward after Wake Court is over, *if the roads that way shall not be found inconvenient*, and if it be not too much out of our way. Our course will be through Philadelphia, where I expect to be detained at court till the last of February; then homeward bound through Middletown, in Connecticut, Mrs. Cushing's native place, and at length I suppose we shall compleat a voyage of 8 mos."

The most important case in which Judge Cushing rendered a decision as a Justice of the Supreme Court, is said to have been that of Chisholm *v.* Georgia. The point at issue was one relating to State Rights, and the opinion of the court itself was a divided one. Judge Cushing expressed the prevailing view, but the case was of such vital importance that later, when his name was proposed as Governor of Massachusetts, his decision was used against his nomination.

His so-called diary, written on the blank leaves of the *North American Almanack* for the year 1776, was preserved in the Francis B. Lee family until a few years ago, but is now unfortunately missing. Before it disappeared, Charles Otis Ellms copied it, and its items are of interest, for they reveal many acts of neighborly kindness shown by himself and wife. It also fixes the date of the building of "Neal's gate," which has given its name to the "Neal Gate Road." Neal was Judge Cushing's farmer,* who managed the farm in his absence, and he began work

*The site of Neal's house can be seen in the field west of Neal Gate Road, marked by a clump of bushes on the hillock near the roadway.

on the gate April 4, 1776. In this diary, items of historic interest were interspersed by farm notes, as "Mr. Neal broke flax," "Mr. Neal dressed flax," "Mr. Neal finished the gate." On Thursday, April 11, an item of local interest is recorded:

"Yesterday a scow from the West Indies for Boston, for the Ministerial Army, loaded with 355 hogsheads of rum, &c, was taken off Cohasset, by some boats from thence. Col. Doane's son with those who took it.— Major Thomas Lothrop commanding. Last Wed. week, Capt. Manley took a vessel that went off with the fleet from Boston, worth in English goods, cash and plate, £35,000 Sterling. Bill Jackson and other Tories on board."

NOTE: Elisha Doane, Jr., married later a niece of Judge Cushing, and Wm. Jackson married Madam Cushing's sister.

In this year of 1776, smallpox had broken out with much virulence, in the army and elsewhere, and physicians were urging inoculation to stay its ravages. There was much opposition to this practice, and doctors in many places were subjected to personal violence for advocating it. Actions were begun against some of Scituate's most respected physicians "for breach of bond for faithful discharge of duty." Both Judge and Madam Cushing were inoculated, thereby setting an example that probably had much to do with allaying the panic.

In 1794, Judge Cushing was nominated as candidate for Governor of Massachusetts in opposition to Samuel Adams. A letter written by him to Theophilus Parsons shows that he was averse to accepting the nomination, and in fact declined it, but electioneering in his behalf continued. John Adams said at this time, "I shall be happier if Cushing succeeds, and the State will be more prudently conducted." His letter to Parsons reads:

"Last evening I received your favor of the 18th of Feb., enclosed from Mr. Cabot's from Phila. whereof I understand that you and other friends are pleased to honor me by proposing me as a candidate for the chief of government. At the same time that I most heartily join with you in wishing well to the Union, I must be excused in continuing to decline the honor proposed. . . . In the first place, which however with a patriot you will say ought to be the last, I am not a man of sufficient fortune to hold that office, being confident that $800 will not be competent to make a tolerably decent appearance through the year, and treat people with any degree of propriety, with all the economy I am master of. If I do but rub and go with $1000 in the present mode of life, $800 will necessarily fall short

in the other. Add to this the habits of a country life to which I have always been used for the bigger part of the year, and which are strengthened as one advances in age,— as also of a particular line of duty, the judicial, which by becoming natural, becomes tolerably easy, and must be attended with less fatigue of mind and less injury to health, than the more political work of the first station in the executive, — not to mention the uncertainty of annual election, and the continual gauntlet of newspapers to run, which latter, however, I do not much regard, being easily consoled with the consciousness of views and motives that are not bad."

Chief Justice Jay resigned in 1796, and Judge Cushing was nominated for the vacant position. His first intimation of this great honor was at a large dinner party given by the President. On his entering the room, Washington turned to him and said, "The Chief Justice of the United States will please take his seat on my right." His nomination had been unanimously confirmed by the Senate, but notwithstanding this evidence of great trust in his integrity and ability, and against the urgent remonstrance of Washington, he declined the honor on account of poor health. A severe illness in Washington that year, from which he never fully recovered, and his advancing years, warned him against assuming added cares. He continued upon the bench until 1810, and that year prepared his resignation, which was signed and ready to be sent to President Madison, when he was stricken with his fatal illness in his home at Scituate. He died on September 13, 1810, at the age of seventy-eight years.

Judge and Madam Cushing were communicants of the Second Church, but at the time of his death their pastor, Dr. Barnes, was very old and infirm, and his young colleague, the Rev. Samuel Deane, a comparative stranger, so they naturally turned to their neighbor, the Rev. Nehemiah Thomas, for sympathy and consolation, and he was sent for to be present during the last moments of the Judge's life. A letter sent by Mr. Thomas to Mrs. Cushing a month later has been preserved. In it he says:

"Those to whom Judge Cushing was known as a public character may be sensible of the loss which society has sustained by his death;

but they only who knew those virtues which rendered him so peculiarly amiable in private life, and so universally respected and beloved by his neighbors and townsmen, can duly estimate your loss. . . . It was so ordained in providence that I should be with him in his last moments, and witness the departure of a man, whom I had long considered the most perfect character, with whom I had the happiness of personal acquaintance. . . . The present you lately sent me was rendered doubly valuable by the sentiments of piety and benevolent wishes for my welfare accompanying it. I am your grateful and much obliged friend, N. THOMAS."

Deane, in his "History of Scituate," says of him:

"In person he was of middling stature, erect and graceful; of form rather slight, of complexion fair, of blue and brilliant eyes, and aquiline nose. . . . He diligently collected works of taste, and he read with the greatest care. . . . He was a learned theologian — well acquainted with the controversies of the day, and though far from gathering heat from those controversies, he was conspicuously on the side of liberal Christianity."

His large and valuable library was given, on the death of Madam Cushing, to her grand-nephew, William Cushing Hammatt, of Bangor, and was burned in a fire that consumed his house. It is interesting to observe how Deane's description corresponds with the silhouette here shown.

Deane further tells us: "As a Judge, he was eminently qualified by his learning, and not less by his unshaken integrity and deliberate temper," and adds, that he "first saw him on the bench in 1801 when his zenith brightness had probably abated," but he still remembered how forcibly his youthful mind was affected by the order and perspicuity with which he performed his high office, and the mild though commanding dignity with which he guided the bar.

William Cushing had been a noted Judge under changing governments — that of the Province, the Commonwealth, and the Nation. It is remarkable how his trained mind, inherited from two generations of eminent judges, guided him in laying the foundations of constitutional law — a new branch of jurisprudence peculiar to America — by his interpretation of the Constitution of Massachusetts for ten years before that of the United States was ratified. His grasp of fundamentals enabled him to draw correct deductions in cases

arising from entirely new conditions of society and of government; and to blaze a path, through a maze of complications, in a way that led to a substantial interpretation of the rights of man and of society, under these new conditions. A mind less gifted would have missed the true interpretation, and so have delayed the rightful solution of the many important and original questions arising at this period.

Scituate is justly proud of her distinguished son. On August 30, 1919, the Scituate Historical Society unveiled a memorial tablet at the junction of Stockbridge

and Judge Cushing Roads at Greenbush. The *bas-relief* of Judge Cushing by Cyrus Dallin is flanked on one side by a quotation from his most famous charge while Chief Justice of Massachusetts, which ended slavery in the state; and on the other by a quotation from his decision in the case of Chisholm *v.* Georgia, as an Associate Justice of the Supreme Court. The able addresses given on this occasion by former Lieut.-Governor Grafton D. Cushing, a descendant of his brother John; and by Chief Justice Arthur P. Rugg, the present holder of the high office Cushing so adorned, have been published.* It is now the privilege of Chief Justice Cushing Chapter to add this tribute to his memory, as a citizen and townsman.

Madam Cushing

MADAM CUSHING was Hannah, a daughter of George and Esther Phillips, and was born at Middletown, Conn., in 1754, in the old Phillips house, where she was afterwards married. She must have been an uncommonly pretty baby, for we are told that Cushing, then a young lawyer, was entertained at her father's house at one time, and Mrs. Phillips jokingly remarked on his state of single-blessedness at the age of twenty-two. He is said to have replied: "I shall wait for this young lady to grow up, and make *her* my wife," turning to the cradle where baby Hannah lay. They were married twenty years later.

The Sharpless picture shows her as she looked at thirty-five: plump, black eyed, short of stature, with a pleasant, yet determined face,— a stately woman, such as the formal manners of her day decreed the wife of a judge should be.

* Judge Rugg's eloquent tribute to Judge Cushing's ability as a jurist can be found in the *Yale Law Journal* of December, 1920.

MADAM CUSHING

Although she survived her husband for twenty-four years, and passed the years of her widowhood in the Scituate home, few recollections of her remain in the

town, for she left no descendants, and the relatives who once lived near by removed elsewhere. Her grand-niece, Mrs. Mary Carr Stillwell,* has recalled to our minds the many social and official functions in which Madam Cushing bore her part with honor. She tells us of her beautiful hands that she used so skilfully in knitting; and of her fine embroideries in tent-stitch and crewel work, that are the more remarkable, as she was extremely near sighted. The seats of her drawing-room chairs are mentioned in particular, embroidered with flowers, blue-jays, and striped tigers; and a coat-of-arms, given to cousins residing in Mobile, was destroyed in the Civil War.

Many were the distinguished names attached to cards of invitation to dine, to assemblies, and other social entertainments. These cards had been preserved in a way well known to ladies of former generations, for Madam Cushing thriftily cut up a good many of them for her silk winders, and her niece recalls this, and says that she, as a young girl, unwound several of them.

"The President of the United States desires the company of Judge Cushing at dinner at four o'clock."

"Mr. Chew requests the honor of Judge Cushing's company at Dinner at four. An answer is desired."

"Mrs. Bingham requests the honor of your company at dinner on Feb. 16, 1792."

Among them were some odd visiting cards: one of the French Minister, M. Adet, written on a playing card — the Queen of Hearts — 1792; of Samuel Adams, James Otis, Mr. Bingham, Mr. Bigelow, and others, all men of high official position and social standing.

It is rather pleasant in these later days to look back to the times when ladies wore stiff brocades and powdered hair; to Madam Cushing in her white, pointed-toed, high-heeled, English-made satin shoes, with broad paste buckles set in silver, her tabby gowns and lace kerchief, her sprigged aprons wrought in true-lovers' knots, and her ruffled lace elbows.

*In a paper read before the Chapter in 1914.

That she was esteemed by her friends and contemporaries will be seen from the letters of her companions, Mrs. Abigail Adams, Mrs. Mercy Warren, and others.

Mrs. Adams wrote:

Quincy, Nov. 3, 1811.

My dear Friend — I owe to your friendship a letter of thanks for the interest you take in whatever concerns me or mine. . . . Letters from my son, John Quincy Adams, in Russia, inform us that he has declined his seat upon the bench. . . . The President wishes to be remembered to you. . . . I am, My dear friend,

Affectionately yours, ABIGAIL ADAMS.

An extract from Mrs. Warren says:

"I beg the favor of Madam Cushing's company to sit with me an hour that I may, by her example, learn to bear the affliction which has come upon me." [The loss of her well-loved son.]

The following is a letter from Mrs. Pinckney:

My Dear Madam:

Major Pinckney arrived here two days ago, and in answer to my inquiries after you and the Judge, informed me that he heard you had been at Richmond and had left it, so that now I do not know where to direct to you, and the pleasure of seeing you must be left wholly to chance. I do not dwell on the subject, as you will not read this till after your arrival in Philadelphia, where perhaps we may have the satisfaction of seeing each other at Mount Vernon, or on the road. If I have not the pleasure of seeing you, it will be a subject of great regreat to General Pinckney, as well as to myself, and to ———— [name illegible]. They beg to join me in assuring you and the Judge of our good wishes, and I have taken the liberty of leaving with Mrs. Wolcott a fan of which I beg your acceptance. I hope you will continue to give me the satisfaction of hearing from you, and I will now and then recall myself to your recollection. . . . Every blessing attend you. MARY PINCKNEY.

Philadelphia, 16 Dec., 1790.

One can fancy the dignified lady comfortably sitting in the long room of their beautiful home at Scituate, with the projecting rafters of the ceiling, the deep fireplace with its tiles, and broad brick hearth with shining brasses, a little tripod table by her side, and her work-bag, with its drawing strings, and a heap of crewels upon it — crewels which she winds with her delicate plump hands; on one finger a ring bearing the motto, "This is thine but thou art mine."

In their hospitable home there were often visiting young nieces, and because Aunt Cushing did not believe in folded hands, they were asked to hemstitch the

ruffles of the Judge's linen shirts, to embroider needle-cases, and work samplers in tent-stitch.

In the Scituate home, with its quaint, beautiful furnishings, Judge and Madam Cushing spent the life of kind, courtly, neighboring folk, she ever helpful for others' needs; and after her husband's death, for the twenty-four years of her widowhood, she lived alone, faithfully attended by their colored servants—one whose life was in the past rather than in the present. A gentlewoman in birth and breeding, who had lived in the most interesting time of our country's history, and had borne her part in it with dignity and ease.

Many relics of her household, and all her personal belongings, were given to her family connections, for the Scituate home was richly appointed. Among the most valuable of them all were the Sharpless portraits of Washington, Adams, Judge and Madam Cushing, that were hung in a row in the large, state dining-room. The two former were given to the Judge's niece, Hannah Phillips Aylwin, who married Gov. Hoppin, of Providence; and those of Judge and Madam Cushing to her niece, Esther Parsons, who had married William Hammatt. They are now owned and greatly treasured by her grandson, William Cushing Donnell, of Houlton, Me.

When Philadelphia was the capital, the English artist, James Sharpless, made many pastel portraits of the notables who gathered there, and it is said that those of the Judge and his wife were suggested by Washington himself, in conversation with Mrs. Cushing, who replied that they would be pleased to sit to Sharpless, if His Honor would do the same. An extract from one of the Judge's letters written from Philadelphia tells us that he did not particularly like his own portrait. He wrote:

"I must give you a hint that Mr. Sharpless, from New York, has been here some weeks taking portraits; lodges in the same house with us, and that last week he took your aunt, and whether you will believe it or not he has given her a prodigious handsome face — and yet through the embellishments you may see some of the original

lineaments. . . . Although not liking my portrait taken by him, which I believe you have seen at your Uncle George's, he has taken me again yesterday, which I like much better, tho' he does not incline to abate much of anything in the nose."

The pictures here shown were made from photographs of these portraits, and cannot indicate the delicate coloring of the pastel drawings, a distinctive feature of Sharpless' work.

We are told of the treasures found in the old mahogany brass-trimmed bureau — fabrics given her by her dear friends, laid carefully away, and labeled in faded writing: "This piece was given me by my dear friend, Mrs. Pinckney, as a reminder of the pleasant occasions when we have worn together our favorite brocades, she receiving an equivalent from mine of the cream color with pink roses." Another read: "My nephew, Capt. P—— brought from London for his wife, at the same time with my best china tea-set, which I desire they shall have when I shall have done with it." Another: "From the much honored Mrs. Adams to make pincushions."

Under these were the dresses laid away untouched since worn in the days of our Republican Court. Many times had her young nieces begged for a glimpse of these beautiful gowns, but were always answered, "No, my dears, the time will come when they will be shown, but not by me." The one they especially longed to see was known to them as the "Garden Satin," purchased at great price, and imported expressly for Washington's Inaugural Reception. But first they found a delicate India muslin covered with sprays of embroidery, and a large muslin apron, with designs of chain-stitch filled in by lacework as exquisite as point lace, the labor of a twel' month at Miss Ranney's school. Under these was the Sharpless portrait dress of pearl gray; and finally, folded within fine, white linen, printed with the gayest and prettiest of bright-colored flowers, lay the "Garden Satin." A strange name for a gown indeed, but singularly appropriate, for the groundwork of the fabric was "a clear green, almost covered by a vinery of leaves of

beautiful shading and tint, with many a sweet flower, clinging, swinging, and twisting among it; just a little speck of brown here, a streak, like pale sunshine there." Madam had said, "My Garden Satin, Sister B's daughter Hannah must have." She hesitated to take it, for what could be done with it? Some one said, "What beautiful sofa pillows it will make!" So it was divided, and every relative of Madam Cushing, far and near, received a piece to be thus preserved in memory of their distinguished relative.

Judge Cushing had often expressed the desire to be buried in the family lot at Belle House Neck, where lay three generations of his family; and at his death these wishes were carried out by his brothers, to whom he had given explicit directions. A burial place in this remote spot did not please Madam Cushing, and before her death, in 1834, she had built a tomb in the burying-ground of the Second Parish, with the intention of having the Judge's remains removed and buried with her own, hoping that the remonstrances of his family to such removal would have been overcome in the quarter of a century that had elapsed since his death. Instructions were left with a trusted neighbor to have her wishes carried out, but the objections were not removed. In the Cushing lot, near the river, stands a granite shaft bearing only the name "Cushing," while in the Second Parish burying-ground is the brick vault with massive slate top, the final resting-place of Madam Hannah Cushing, his wife.

The Cushing Mansion

THE Cushing home at Walnut Tree Hill was built by Judge John 2d, William's father, in 1743, he having built the house now standing at Belle House Neck the year before. On the completion of the second house he removed there with his family, and left the house at the Neck in the possession of his eldest son, John, who had lately married.

The broad acres around the mansion were upon the main highway, extending to Neal Gate Road, and the house he built there was of large and dignified proportion, appropriate to one of his social standing. It was a stately mansion of Georgian architecture, and contained many rooms. We are pleasantly reminded that once in our own town stood a house ranking in dignity with Mt. Vernon, when we hear of its state dining-room, where hung in a row the Sharpless portraits of General Washington and John Adams, with those of Judge and Madam Cushing — the two former presented by Washington himself.

Two doorways on the south and west sides had beautiful fan lights, and over one of these may at one time have stood the "honey-suckle porch" of sweet and fragrant memory. Four fine Lombardy poplars stood in front of the mansion, whose front walk was lined with stiff evergreen trees to the gateway. An avenue of trees bordered the highway for nearly a mile, said by some to have been Lombardy poplars, by others, "button-woods." This long, tree-lined avenue added much to the dignity of the surroundings.

The Rev. Wm. P. Tilden has written of his recollection of the place:

> "One of the fine old places in Scituate was Madam Cushing's, in the centre of the town. . . . She was a lady of the old school, who had been accustomed to the best society. She was always known as 'Madam Cushing'; and her fine old mansion and beautiful grounds were a delight to my boyish eyes. There was no place like it in town. Then too, she was generous to us boys, and at cherry time would invite us into her beautiful garden, and give us the free range of her magnificent 'black-heart' cherry-trees, the largest and finest I ever saw."

In the terraced garden grew great varieties of fruits and vegetables — on one terrace were strawberries, both white and red; and a relative of Madam Cushing has recalled some tomato vines, then known as the love apple, raised from seed which Judge Cushing brought from Washington. These vines were torn up and thrown away "because they smelt so bad."

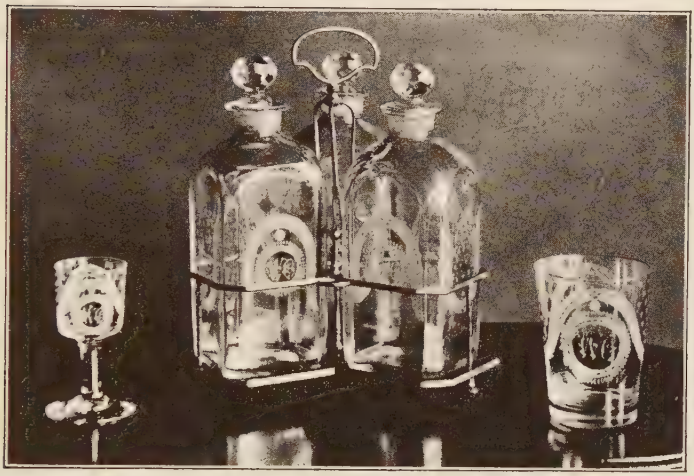
The house itself was richly furnished, and contained many valuable papers and mementoes gathered and preserved by the family. On the death of Madam Cushing, these treasures were distributed among the relatives of both families. We have been told of the great white settle that stood in the ordinary dining-room, a favorite seat for young lovers — and of "the great kitchen full of niggers," family servitors bequeathed to Judge and Madam. Prince, the black coachman, had been given to Madam Cushing by her father when she was a young girl, on condition that "she shall take him up to be christened." Then there were Scipio and Alice, both remembered in later years.

On the death of Madam Cushing, in 1834, the estate passed into the possession of the Judge's nephew, Charles Cushing, according to provisions in his uncle's will, with the intention that it should remain in the family. Charles Cushing at this time was living in the old Gov. Wentworth mansion, near Portsmouth, "at Little Harbor, just beyond the town, where his great house stood looking out to sea. A goodly place, where it was good to be." Preferring Portsmouth to Scituate, he sold the place to his cousin, William Cushing Aylwin, a wealthy Bostonian, who had married his cousin, Sarah Paine.*

William Aylwin bought the place for a summer home, but his wife, who was long known as a Boston belle, and a woman of fashion, naturally found Scituate too tame and lonely for her taste, so her husband sold it to a member of the Swan family, of Vermont,† who were descendants of Judge William's half-sister Mary. The old mansion was burned in 1872. Since that date the estate has had several owners. A cottage was built by one of them upon the old cellar, and that house was burned a few years ago. After the second fire, the

* Both Mr. and Mrs. Aylwin were descendants of Judge John 2d.
† The Danas.

present owner of the farm* moved the stable, with its large, arched entrance doors, the only one of the original buildings that were once Judge Cushing's, to the old house cellar, and remodeled it into the present structure.



The bottles and glasses shown in this picture belong to a very beautiful case of glasses given by Judge Cushing, in his will, to his namesake, William Cushing Whitridge, a son of his niece, Mary Cushing (daughter of his half-brother John), who lived at Tiverton, R. I. Dr. Whitridge was for many years a prominent physician in New Bedford. William Whitridge, of Baltimore, the present owner of the glasses, is a grandson.

Judge Nathan Cushing

NATHAN CUSHING was a descendant of John of Belle House Neck, through the line of his youngest son, Joseph. He was one of the fifteen children of Dea. Joseph Cushing, Jr., and Lydia King, born in 1742, educated by his father, and graduated from Harvard College in 1763. He was first a preacher, and afterward a lawyer. At the outbreak of the Revolution he was

* Geo. H. Pollard.

Scituate's Representative to the General Court of the Colony, and immediately began his activities for the cause of the patriots. His name was the first on the list of persons appointed in 1774 to draft resolutions "relating to the difficulties of the times." He served his town as a member of the "Committee of Inspection and Correspondence" in 1774; a Representative to the Congress at Watertown, in May, 1775; to the Congress at Cambridge, in February, 1775, and again in 1776 and 1777.

He was one of the three members sent from Scituate to ratify the Federal Constitution in January, 1778, with his cousin, Chief Justice William, and Hon. Charles Turner. The same year he was appointed Judge of Admiralty, and gained much publicity by the firmness he displayed in condemning the captured British vessels. In 1789, he was appointed a Judge of the Supreme Court, a position which he resigned in 1801.

The Massachusetts Legislature, in 1780, appointed Nathan Cushing a committee to present a design for a state seal. His design was accepted, and the present seal is a constant reminder of this honored gentleman of the old school.

Deane tells us that "he was a gentleman of noble form, commanding countenance and courteous manners." Therefore we think of him as a fine looking, portly man, genial and popular in his native town. No portrait of him is known to exist.

His daughter Abigail was the wife of Dr. Cushing Otis, and her daughter, Abigail Tilden Otis, the last member of the family, died in the eighties.

A story of Judge Nathan's kindness and neighborliness is delightfully told by Rev. William Phillips Tilden, in the reminiscences of his boyhood:

"Our nearest neighbor was Judge Nathan Cushing. He lived in a fine old mansion, close to our house. He was a distinguished man, a graduate of Harvard, a brave patriot in the Revolution; and in 1789 he was appointed Judge of the Supreme Court.

"He married Miss Abigail Tilden of Boston, a relative of father; and this may have added somewhat to the neighborhood ties, for he was a good friend. He died while I was very young; but his fine

old home, with its pleasant surroundings, was one of the attractions of my early childhood. Aunt Lizzie, especially, a domestic in the household, a sort of general see-to-everything, was my special favorite. Perhaps it was her seed-cakes and other dainties which lent a charm to our intimacy, that lodged her pleasant face in my memory.

"The old judge was particularly fond of my little brother Albert, and used often to take him out to ride. One day, when the time was approaching for Albert to shed his frock, the judge took him home, and unbeknown to mother, had the frock taken off and tied up in a bundle, and the boy arrayed in a beautiful suit of velvet he had bought for him. Thus changed from petticoats to velvet pants and jerkin, proud as a peacock, he was carried home to his astonished mother. The tradition of this pleasant incident is remembered as one of the fairy stories of home life. If one wants to make himself a hero and attain to earthly immortality, let him give some boy his first suit of jacket and pants."

"Half-Way House"

Post Roads and Taverns

THE early settlers of the South Shore towns found that the waters of Massachusetts Bay furnished a comparatively easy line for their limited travel and for trading with settlements along the coast. Before 1700, packet lines were established that made it a safe journey to Massachusetts Colony towns during the summer months. Scituate also had a natural highway in the North River, which gave to her groups of settlers along its course several "ports of entry" at the various landings which still bear their ancient names — Hobart's Landing, King's Landing, Job's Landing. During the winter months it was another matter to sail along the unchartered shore, as Capt. Anthony Collamore found it in December, 1693, when his vessel was wrecked on the ledge off North Scituate Beach, since that time known as "Collamore's Ledge." The captain's body was recovered, and "buried under arms," as he was the captain of the town militia.

To reach the inland settlements, like the Bridgewaters, a horseback ride over the old Indian trails was necessary. If the goodwife accompanied her husband, she rode behind him on a pillion. Horses were scarce, but if one was available, a party of four could go by the "ride and tie" method, one couple riding for some distance, then dismounting and tying the horse, and proceeding on foot for a time. The other couple, who had set out on foot, would come upon the horse, rested, and waiting for them to ride in their turn.

The old Plymouth Coast Road, from Boston to Plymouth, was provided for by the General Court in 1639. It ran over "the Neck," through Roxbury and Milton, to that part of old Braintree now known as Quincy; from there through Weymouth to Hingham and Cohasset, then a part of the town of Hingham; over the King's Highway across Bound Brook, and "the Cohasset road" into Scituate. There it took the name of the "Countrey Way" over Brushy Hill, to the ferry on the North River, established as early as 1637 by Mr. William Vassall, near his home at Belle House Neck. That year, 200 acres of very advantageously situated land along the river were granted that distinguished gentleman, on the condition that he "keep a ferry against his farm, toll 1d for a man, and 4d for a beast." Around 1730 it was known as Doggett's Ferry, as Capt. John Doggett was then the ferryman.

The following year, the court ordered a ferry kept near the mouth of the river, below "New Harbour marshes," for the convenience of the magistrates. Its first ferryman was Jonathan Brewster of Duxbury. In 1645, Ralph Chapman, the ferryman, implored the court to excuse him, "as it would bring him to extreme poverty." He was excused, except on "special occasions."

The road leading to Vassall's was one of the earliest laid out, before 1646. Before that date it was simply a matter of choice whether the trail along the shore over the Third and Fourth Cliff, and Brewster's Ferry, be

chosen, or that less-exposed tract to Vassall's Ferry, and then on to Duxbury and Plymouth.

Horses were scarce at that period in New England; but before 1680, the famous Narragansett pacers, ideal saddle horses, were being bred in large numbers in Rhode Island. In 1677, Capt. John Hull, father of the bouncing lass who married Judge Sewall, and brought him a dowry of her weight in pinetree shillings, conceived the idea of fencing off the north end of Point Judith Neck, on the Narragansett tract, of which he was one of the original proprietors, with a "good stone wall," and there breeding a choice breed of saddle and draught horses, for the use of the wealthy planters of the West Indies and the colonies. These Narragansett pacers were one of the luxuries of that day, and the wealthy settlers of Scituate were doubtless owners of good saddle horses.

Scituate was the first town in the colony to employ a jury or commission to lay out roads. The first foreman of such a commission was Mr. William Vassall, appointed before 1646. One of the roads laid out by this first jury was from Stedman's mill at "the green bush," to his own residence at Belle House Neck, and the ferry near at hand. This first road followed the course of what is now named "Judge Cushing Road," that ancient way that is being renewed by the town of Scituate, from the location of the "Judge Cushing Memorial," across Rotten Marsh to the Cushing burial place on the old Vassall-Cushing estate.

Weeden, in his "Economic and Social History of New England," says that Plymouth Colony was busy building roads as early as 1639. Most of these roads followed the old Indian trails, which were leveled, and rude bridges built over some of the streams that were not fordable at all seasons. The story of these early roads is a fascinating study, and before leaving them to give an account of the old turnpikes, we must dwell for a moment on that old trail known as the "Massachusetts Path," between Plymouth and Massachusetts, used for many years, or hundreds of years it may be, by the red men before the

English trod these shores. Most people are familiar with the story of that old trail; of Gov. Winthrop and his party passing over it on foot to visit Gov. Bradford at Plymouth, and when, on the return trip, after passing the "great swamp," they came to what they called the "great river," the Indian Head, the principal tributary of North River. There, the water being high and the current strong, the dignified governor was forded over the stream on the back of his guide, named Luddam. This place has since borne the name of "Luddam's Ford." It is near the Clapp Rubber Mill at Curtis' Crossing.

Massachusetts Colony began as early as September 5, 1639, to make some arrangements to regulate mail matter. On that date an act was passed "For preventing the miscarriage of letters," which reads: "It is ordered that notice bee given that Richard Fairbanks his house in Boston is the place appointed for all letters which are brought from beyond the seas, or are to be sent thither. . . . such letters are to be brought unto him, and he is to take care that they be delivered, or sent according to their directions, and he is allowed for each letter 1d, and must answer all miscarriages through his own neglect in this kind; provided that no man shall be compelled to bring his letters thither except he please." This regulated the foreign mail service; domestic service still went its way unregulated, carried by chance travelers by boat or on horseback.

In 1673, the first regular mounted post from Boston to New York was established. This messenger service was once in two weeks, and the rider, who was "sent post," was allowed 3d per mile for horse and man. Inn holders were limited for baiting the horse to two shillings per bushel for oats, and 4d for hay, day and night.

In 1693, an act was passed by the General Court establishing, for the first time under that name, a General Post-office. In 1706, John Campbell was postmaster at Boston. In 1704, he began to publish the first newspaper in the colonies, entitled the *Weekly Intelligencer*, later to

be known as the *Boston News Letter*. It is believed that post-riders passed through Scituate at this early date, for there is a tradition that they rode over an old "way" that was abandoned as early as 1704. This old way bore to the north near the Second Herring Brook, east of South Scituate Village, passed to the east of Herring Brook Hill, where the village is located, skirted Dead Swamp, and came out on what is now known as Central Street. Here the trail divided; the left-hand trail led to Bryant's Corner, where a small settlement had been made, and the right-hand to the "common lands" around Sherman's Corner, where a few more settlers had taken up lands. Until 1775, post-riders passed through the towns at intervals neither frequent nor regular.

In 1773, Hugh Finley was appointed postal surveyor from Quebec to St. Augustine. He reported carelessness as to mails and delivery; letters were often left in tavern tap rooms, to be pulled over by any and all loungers who frequented these places, and thus were lost. At this time a law was passed forbidding the carrying of letters by private messenger, as the postmaster's salary depended on the number of letters carried by the rider. The post-riders themselves seem to have been the chief offenders, carrying all way letters at their own profit by pocketing the money paid for postage, which was paid on the delivery of the letter.

Benjamin Franklin, the most famous colonial postmaster, was removed from office in 1774 because of his sympathy with the patriot cause. The Second Continental Congress assembled May 10, 1775, and on May 12, William Goddard, by the authority of this Congress, established a Constitutional Post-office, with Franklin as Postmaster General. One of the first mail routes established under Franklin was from Cambridge through Plymouth and Sandwich to Falmouth, covered each week by post-riders. In June, 1775, William Watson was appointed postmaster at Plymouth, with Timothy Goodwin and Joseph Howland as post-riders. A mail

route ran through Scituate to Plymouth as soon as the system was established, and Goodwin and Howland came into town by way of Doggett's Ferry. These early riders left letters at various farmhouses along the way, or delivered them to messengers who were sent to meet them. The Cushing farmhouse at Belle House Neck was a convenient place for this purpose, in sight of the ferry which the rider must cross. Here dwelt the elder half-brother of the Chief Justice of Massachusetts, and letters of much interest were left there. Our minds picture the colored servant of his father, Judge John Cushing, who, on days when the post-rider was expected, would leave the home at Walnut Tree Hill, pass through "Mr. Neal's gate" along the private road leading to the old farmhouse, and there find the letters for which the old judge was anxiously waiting, some of them from his son, Judge William, who, as the newly appointed Chief Justice of the Supreme Judicial Court, was trying to re-establish that court, and place the judicial system on a firm basis. Letters, too, for his distant cousin, Judge Nathan Cushing, who lived some two miles to the westward, at Henchman's Corner, and who had come into public notice first as Scituate's Representative, and then as Judge of Admiralty during the Revolution.

The first post-office in Scituate was established in 1800, and Charles Turner, Jr., called Col. Charles, was the first postmaster. Col. Charles lived in the south part of the town on what is now called Winter Street, but there seems to be no especial evidence that the office was kept at his home. In 1805, Augustus Clap was appointed postmaster, and the office removed to his home, the old Clapp mansion, remembered by many now living, taken down by the Clapp heirs after the death of Miss Mary Leonard Clapp. This office was the only one in town until 1828 and 1829, when three other offices were opened: one at South Scituate, John K. Nash, Postmaster; at Assinippi, Edward Jacob, Postmaster; and the third at the Harbor village, Gideon W. Young, Postmaster.

Miss Mary A. Ford, in speaking of Greenbush about 1825, says: "Then came the one horse 'shay,' in which 'Diah' Little, with his wooden leg, used to convey an occasional passenger and the mail from Marshfield, through Scituate to Boston, once or twice a week, leaving the mail in his day at the old Clapp colonial house near the 'tan brook,' depositing letters in a pewter platter, or the bean pot."

After the Revolution, the coastwise trade, and that with the West Indies, began to revive and increase, and the foundations of many substantial fortunes were laid. Vessels with which to carry on this trade were being built in large numbers in the busy North River shipyards; and as business meant intercourse with the outside world, so the South Shore towns must provide means of communication and transportation of passengers from place to place. Then began the era of the stage-coach, over roads connecting, in a fairly direct way, and built by private enterprise, the various towns with Boston; the old turnpikes, with their toll-gates, stone toll-houses, and the toll-bridges over the rivers. Scituate had two of these toll-bridges, the one built at Doggett's Ferry in 1825, its toll-house still standing, and the earlier one at Oakman's Ferry, built in 1801, called Union Bridge. Queen Ann's Turnpike, extending from Queen Ann's Corner to Weymouth, was begun in 1801, and completed by Noah Bronson, of Milton, in 1803.

When the new post-offices were opened in 1828, a company of Scituate men started an accommodation coach line from South Scituate to Boston, and another from Scituate Harbor through Cohasset and Hingham. In 1831, these lines were sold to Parker Jones & Co., and Duxbury became the starting-point of both. In 1854, the Scituate and Cohasset line was sold to Charles Clapp, of Scituate, and the South Scituate line to Seth and Benjamin P. Foster. The Duxbury end of the business was discontinued, for the Old Colony Railroad had been built from Boston to Plymouth in 1845, and Duxbury

was more conveniently served by connection with the railroad at Kingston. Foster's coach accommodated the Two Mile section of Marshfield, a small coach bringing the passengers to connect with the Hingham coach. These coaches carried the local mails. The names of the drivers of these old Duxbury coaches are familiar ones: "Jake" Sprague, "Parse" Bowker, called "Parsie" by the boys, with whom he was a great favorite, Harvey Bates, of the South Scituate line, and "Bill" Ferguson of the one through Scituate.

The South Shore Railroad had been built as far as Cohasset in 1849, and the weary rides to Boston were much shortened by Scituate's coach running to the Cohasset station, and the South Scituate line ending at Hingham, to go by rail in winter and by the steamboat line in summer.

Seth Foster began driving South Scituate's coach March 1, 1854. He was then a young man, and he drove daily to Hingham until 1875. During the days of the Civil War the traffic was very heavy, and two coaches were needed each day, the second driven by his brother Ben. They carried the North Marshfield, South Scituate, Assinippi, and South Hingham mails. The Duxbury & Cohasset Railroad was completed in 1872, and after 1875, Foster gave up the Hingham route and drove to Greenbush, and in all carried the mails for forty-three consecutive years. So highly was he regarded for honesty and fair dealing that he often attended to private matters for others, requiring business sagacity and forethought, and handled large sums of money for neighbors and fellow townsmen.

Taverns, or "ordinaries," for the entertainment of man and beast, were licensed as soon as the old Indian trails were leveled to make traveling on horseback possible from settlement to settlement. In 1657, Nicholas Wade, who lived on the west side of Brushy Hill, was licensed to keep an "ordinary." This is the earliest record of a licensed ordinary that has been

discovered on the town records. None but those of highest reputation were allowed to entertain chance guests, and host and hostess were responsible for the conduct of those they entertained, who, if this was not satisfactory, were at once conducted to the village limits and told to return no more.

Around 1750, the house at the Harbor village, later known as the Capt. James Little house, was a tavern, and in 1767 the last meeting of the Conihasset Partners was held in one of its rooms. It was again a tavern in 1828, kept by Gideon Young, who later removed to the house near Satuit Brook, generally spoken of as the "old tavern," and later called the "Satuit House." Both these houses have been called "Young's Tavern," and have often been confused, one for the other. Both were noted stopping-places for Scituate's stages, as the post-office was located in each while Gideon Young was postmaster. There was a tavern near Bisbee's Ferry on the North River, kept by Elisha Bisbee in 1700. Caleb Torrey had a tavern on the north side of Herring Brook Hill (South Scituate Village) soon after 1731. The old house was taken down in 1827, and stood where John Martin now lives. John Foster kept a tavern in the Dea. Hatherly Foster house. This was a noted tavern during the Revolution, as many town meetings of the period were held in it. Capt. Hayward, and his son, Elijah Peirce, kept a tavern in Capt. Michael's old house, that stood across the street from the present one. Dr. Peleg Ford's house at Greenbush was once a tavern, as the old sign in the possession of his granddaughter, Miss Mary Ann Ford, shows. David Jacob's tavern at Assinippi, and that of Capt. Enoch Collamore, both on the Boston road, were of about the same period as those previously mentioned.*

* David Jacob's granddaughter Relief was mother of Hon. Charles Sumner. Jacob's Tavern was the large house occupied by the Rev. Mr. Killam in later years, and Collamore's, that recently known as the William Farrar house.

"Queen Ann" Tavern

Queen Ann's Corner gets its name from Ann Whiton, a notorious character who kept an inn in the old, long house just over the Hingham line. She was known as "Queen Ann," and the house was an inn until its last landlord, Davis Whitten, and his son-in-law, James Sivret, removed.

Probably the most widely known tavern of its day on this old route was the "Half-Way House," a half mile east of Queen Ann's Corner, built in 1800 by Eliphalet Leonard. "Leonard's," as it was first called, was about half way between Boston and Plymouth. The coaches from Plymouth arrived in time for dinner, and the Sandwich coach, which left Boston at five o'clock in the morning, arrived in time for a nine o'clock breakfast. The meal hours were lively ones at this old hostelry, and many stories have been told of the convivial spirits of the guests. Whitten and Sivret succeeded Leonard as landlords, and they were followed in 1831 by William Smith, of Duxbury.

The South Shore House at the Harbor was a popular hostelry of later date, built by John Vinal about 1830,

and was conducted for many years by his widow, who later married John Day Torrey.

Daniel Webster purchased the 1500-acre farm once the home of the locally notorious Tory, Nathaniel Ray Thomas, in 1831, and to reach his Marshfield home he patronized the coach line through South Scituate. He generally alighted at the post-office there, and is said to have been always ready to discuss with much dignity the political situation with the local politicians.

But the romantic days of chaise and stage-coach have gone to return no more, and the picturesque coach, with its four horses, its long-lashed whip, and genial driver, gave way to the long, ungainly "barge," itself replaced by the equally unsightly motor bus or jitney.

A trip to Boston one hundred years ago was a real journey, which took a good part of one day, and the country merchant or shipbuilder, often one and the same, took several days off to attend to business and see the sights. If, from necessity, he must make a "flying trip," he could return on the following day, provided the coach reached the city in good season, for the Plymouth coach that went through Scituate in 1802 left King's Inn on Monday, Tuesday, Friday, and Saturday mornings, and reached "Leonard's" in time for dinner. The leisurely traveler of 1821 hardly conceived of the changes that one hundred years would bring, through the development of electricity and motor vehicles, or even dreamed of such rapid transit from Scituate as a run from Egypt to Boston by the "Lawson Flier" in thirty-eight minutes.

An Ancient Colonial Boundary

LOOKING on the map of eastern Massachusetts one sees a line, practically straight, extending in a southwesterly direction from Scituate to the Rhode Island boundary. This line, about thirty-five miles long, separates townships for its whole length, and for the most part forms the boundary between Norfolk and Plymouth counties. Hingham and Hull, although belonging to the Colony of Massachusetts Bay, were never a part of Plymouth Colony, but have been in the County of Plymouth since 1803. The line is now a county boundary, with the exception that Hingham and Hull lie on the northerly side of it. This line, referred to in old records as the "Old Colony Line," "Patent Line," or "Patten Line," is the longest straight boundary subdividing Massachusetts. It originally marked the division between the Massachusetts Bay Colony on the north and the Plymouth Colony on the south, thus separating Puritans from Pilgrims. It passes through the middle of Accord Pond, in whose depths lies the meeting point of three towns.

This line was established in 1640 by John Endicott, Israel Stoughton, William Bradford, and Edward Winslow. All these except Israel Stoughton were governors or ex-governors of the colonies — a very distinguished group of officials to lay out this important boundary. The beginning of the line was at "Bound Rock," close by the outlet of Lincoln's Mill Pond at North Scituate.

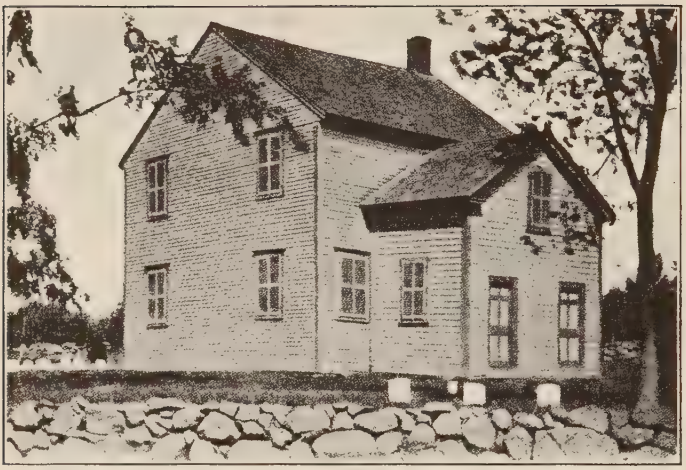
We can picture to ourselves this little party of eminent men in their quaint colonial costumes starting from Bound Rock to lay out the line which should equitably separate the two colonies. Passing as it did through unmapped forest, it must have been a task of no small

difficulty to place the bounds of this long, straight line. Even today the locating across miles of wild country of high-tension electric lines is considered difficult.

This "Old Colony Line" is, with one exception, the earliest artificial boundary located by landmarks in the United States. A line extending twelve miles across the peninsula, from Chesapeake Bay to the ocean, was established in 1632, and remains as a present boundary between Maryland and Virginia. The latter line was designated in a charter from the King, while the Massachusetts Colony line was a mutual arrangement between the two colonies by their own appointed commissioners.

THIS TABLET
IS ERECTED BY THE
COMMONWEALTH
ON THE BOUNDARY LINE
BETWEEN THE PLYMOUTH
AND MASSACHUSETTS
COLONIES.
BOUND ROCK
THE STARTING POINT
OF SAID LINE AS
FIXED IN 1640 BY
JO. ENDECOTT
ISRAEL STOUGHTON
WILLIAM BRADFORD
AND
EDWARD WINSLOW
COMMISSIONERS OF THE
TWO COLONIES
LIES 133 FEET N. 52 DEGREES E.
FROM THIS SPOT.

Bound Rock is underneath a storehouse of the grain mill originally owned by Mordecai Lincoln, on Mordecai Lincoln Road, at the outlet of Lincoln's Mill Pond, and is marked by a stone post, which projects upward through the floor of the building. As it was impracticable to mark the spot with a tablet, the memorial (a boulder with tablet) has been placed close to the main highway at the Cohasset line and resting against the boundary post at a point 133 feet distant from Bound Rock. The memorial was prepared and placed in position by the Old Colony Commission, appointed by the governor in 1895, and consisting of William T. Davis, of Plymouth; Rev. S. Hopkins Emery, of Taunton; and L. Vernon Briggs, of Boston. It was erected in 1900.



Quaker Meeting-House in Pembroke

The Quakers in Scituate

GEORGE FOX, the principal founder of this religious sect, began to preach in England in 1647. He met with much opposition and persecution there, and his followers soon began to emigrate to New England, where they naturally expected that they would find a welcome, or at least an opportunity to enjoy religious liberty.

The first Quakers arrived in Boston in 1656, by way of Barbadoes. These were two women, named Mary Fisher and Ann Austin, and the year following eight more arrived through Rhode Island. But the Puritans, after suffering so much persecution themselves, began to find, now they were the ruling power, that their consciences were not elastic enough to cover the tenets of the Quaker faith, and the Quaker teachings immediately became obnoxious to the Massachusetts Colony. The general feeling of intolerance was not so strong in the Plymouth Colony, owing to the teachings of gentle

John Robinson, the Leyden pastor, and during the first year of their coming they spread over this colony.

As early as 1656, the Massachusetts Colony took measures to try to rid the country of these "undesirable" persons, and a request was made that certain stringent laws be passed by the Commissioners of the United Colonies. Another request was made in 1657 to banish the Quakers. Stern Thomas Prence, the governor, and a majority of his assistants, were less tolerant than the people at large, and by 1658 acquiesced in their banishment under pain of severe corporal punishment. If they returned, then to be punished accordingly and banished under pain of death; and on returning for a second time, to be put to death unless they publicly and plainly renounced their faith. The court of Massachusetts followed out this recommendation to its fullest extent, but to its everlasting credit the Plymouth Colony did not do so, for not all of Gov. Prence's assistants agreed to these stringent measures. At least three of our Scituate men suffered much persecution by their resistance to Gov. Prence's course. Isaac Robinson, son of the Leyden pastor, Gen. James Cudworth, and Timothy Hatherly lost their official positions in 1658 on account of the firm stand they had taken in opposition.

General, or, as he was then, Captain Cudworth being one of the most influential men in the colony, his influence must be destroyed at once, or his pernicious example would tempt other tolerant ones to do likewise. At this time he was captain of the Scituate militia, an assistant of the government, and a commissioner of the United Colonies. A letter sent to England, of which he was suspected of being the author, telling of the bigotry of the Colonial Government, was produced, and another, to the governor, was construed to prove that he was in opposition to the administration, so he was removed from the magistracy and the board of commissioners, and the same year, 1658, deprived of his military command. Even this did not degrade him enough to suit

the austere Gov. Prence, so, in 1659, he was disfranchised, together with Isaac Robinson. We can but admire Capt. Cudworth's course during these persecutions. He remained quietly at home busying himself with his own affairs and those of the town of Scituate. His own town remained loyal to him, and in 1659 returned him as a deputy, but he was rejected by the court.

The dignified course of Capt. Cudworth won him many friends, notably Josiah Winslow, and in 1673, on his election as governor, he tried to make amends for the treatment that had been meted to Cudworth under Prence's government. In the Colony Records, under date of July, 1673, is recorded the following: "Capt. Cudworth, by a full and clear vote, is accepted and re-established in the association and body of this Commonwealth," and the colony again was able to benefit by his valuable assistance and knowledge of the world, which was far greater than that of most men of his time. He was again made an assistant of the government, which office he held from 1674 to 1680. In 1675 he was chosen "General and Commander-in-Chief of all the forces that are, or may be sent forth against the enemy." This office he held till the close of King Philip's War.

There is no definite statement that Gen. Cudworth allied himself with the Quaker church; in fact, he could not have held these public offices had he done so, but members of his family joined it, as the records show. His daughter Mary was married, in 1660, to Robert Whitcomb, by the Quaker ceremony. They were arrested the same night by the authorities, taken to Plymouth, and thrown into jail, there to remain until they should make up their minds to conform to the law, which they did a short time after. The Scituate Society of Friends owes so much to Cudworth that no account of them would be complete without mention of him.

Little has been known until recently of Gen. Cudworth's family connections in England. James Cudworth, salter, came from London to Boston,

according to Deane, in the year 1632, in company with his friend, Timothy Hatherly. His father was Rev. Ralph Cudworth, D. D., of Cambridge, England, a graduate of Emmanuel College, and rector of Alles in Somersetshire. His mother is thought to have been Mary Machell, who belonged to the Saxon family of Machell, Lords in England. She was the nurse of Prince Henry, son of James I of England, the Prince of Wales, who died in 1612. His brother Charles succeeded to the title and subsequently became Charles I of England. She married first Rev. Ralph Cudworth, who died in 1624, and afterwards married Rev. John Stoughton, D. D.

In 1681, Gen. Cudworth was made deputy-governor, and when that same year an agent was to be sent to England, who so eminently fitted for it by family connection, education, and knowledge of colony affairs as he? He arrived in London in the autumn of the year 1682. An epidemic of smallpox was raging there and he contracted the disease and died. His death was a severe blow to the colony, and to the town of Scituate especially. He was one of the few of the early settlers who were left in the town at this date.

In 1661, the English Government abolished the severe laws passed by the colonies against the Quakers, and after this date they were able to meet less secretly.

It is stated that John Rouse, of Marshfield, lost an ear for being an offensive Quaker, and when preaching was in progress in First Meeting-house, the Quakers would kick against the door and cry, "What thou preacheth is not true."

In the year 1661, Edward Wanton came into Scituate, from Boston, and purchased a farm upon the North River, a little distance up the river from the Second Herring Brook. This farm of Wanton's is still known as the Wanton place, and the Wanton Shipyard. Here Edward Wanton built vessels with much success until after 1700. The yard was afterwards used by the Delanos and Fosters, who built many noted vessels there.

Wanton had become a convert to the Quaker faith while in Boston, where three of that sect were executed in 1659-60-61, and Edward was an officer of the guard on at least one of these occasions. So strongly moved was he by their demeanor and their addresses to the assembly, that on returning home he is said to have exclaimed, "Alas, mother! We have been murdering the Lord's people." Taking off his sword he made a solemn vow never to wear it again.

He soon became a public teacher of their faith, and on coming to Scituate, in 1661, became the first Quaker teacher here. He soon gathered a considerable audience of converts from the Scituate families. Members of Cudworth's family were included among them, the family of Henry Ewell, various members of the Colman family, Randalls, Barkers, Northeys, and others. Edward Wanton continued as a religious teacher till his death, in October, 1716, at the age of 85 years. He was buried in the Wanton yard, but no stone now marks the spot. Two sons of Edward Wanton, William and John, deserted the Quaker faith and became famous for some military exploits. All four of Edward's sons settled finally in Newport, R. I. Two were governors of that state.

1740 is the date of the removal from Scituate of the last of this famous family. The Wanton place then passed to the Stetson family, who probably occupied it until purchased by Benj. Delano, in 1770. The house was last occupied by the Stetsons, and was known as the Molly Stetson place at the time it was purchased by Benj. Delano.

The first Quaker meeting-house was built in 1678, on land purchased from Henry Ewell, who lived at Walnut Tree Hill. This lot was later enclosed in the garden of Chief Justice Cushing. In 1706, a second church was built on Edward Wanton's land. Their numbers were increasing up the river, and correspondingly decreasing below. The church undoubtedly stood near to the

burying-place of the Wanton family, which can yet be located by two stones. One known as the Webb stone bears the inscription, "Mary Webb, ye wife of Edward Webb of Boston — died ye 23d 8m. 1708." A fragment of the stone of Judah Butler, a grandson of John Rogers, yet remains. John Rogers, according to tradition, was a descendant of the Smithfield martyr, and came to Scituate with Mr. Witherell in 1644. Rogers became a convert to the Quaker faith in 1660.

The church located on Wanton's land in 1706 was removed to Pembroke, but in what year the removal took place is not known. It is said to have been taken up the river on gundalows to its present location near North River Bridge. At some time the house was divided, and part of it converted into a dwelling-house. The part left for a church is still owned by the Society of Friends, and stands near Schooset Street. Briggs stated in 1889 that the society consisted of twenty or thirty members.

The families of Daniel Otis and Adam Brooks were the last of the Quakers in Scituate.

The Acadians

"THE most momentous and far-reaching question ever brought to issue on this continent was: Shall France remain here or shall she not?" The most tragic chapter in the history of the long conflict between that country and Great Britain is that dealing with the deportation of the Acadians. In our local history, the heartrending events connected with this enforced exile have an added meaning for two reasons: first, because some of these unfortunate people were landed in our Plymouth County towns, where they were forced to remain in their destitution; and second, because the orders of Governor Lawrence for their deportation from Grand Pré and neighboring districts were carried out by Maj. John Winslow, of Marshfield, under commission from Governor Shirley, of Massachusetts.

By the Treaty of Utrecht, in 1713, Acadia was given over to Great Britain by France. It was "expressly stipulated" in the treaty that such of the French inhabitants as "are willing to remain there and to be subject to the Kingdom of Great Britain are to enjoy the free exercise of their religion according to the usage of the Church of Rome, as far as the laws of Great Britain do allow the same." Should any so choose, they might remove with all their effects, if they did so within the year. At the end of that time, all within the province must take the oath of allegiance to the British Crown. Few left the province.

Every effort was now made by France, and her agents in Quebec and Acadia, to prevent the taking of the oath of allegiance, and to keep the province hostile to England. The French priests were among the most active; when not so, complaints were entered against them, as, for example, the Curé of Grand Pré, an

elderly man, was reported to be too much inclined to confine himself to his spiritual functions.

There is no evidence to show that the Acadians were ill treated by the English. They were not molested in the exercise of their religion; on the testimony of French officers, there was no interference in their disputes among one another as to land boundaries, and many other rights which were claimed; there was no attempt even to punish their crimes. There is not much room for doubt that, had they been left to themselves, they would in time have become peaceful citizens, not troubling themselves with any affairs of government. But this was not to be—Acadia was too fair a land not to be fought for by every means, fair and foul. Its people finally became mere "tools of policy, to be used, broken, and flung away."

It was not until 1730 that any number of Acadians could be persuaded to take the oath. Nearly all these signed by crosses, in spite of the threats of the priests. It was claimed later that the oath was taken on condition that they be exempt from bearing arms against the French and Indians, or in any war against the Kingdom of England. On account of this interpretation they came to be known as "Neutrals." At first, they did not violate their oath, even under pressure from the French on the north; finally, however, the charges became so general that some of them took arms, and many others aided the enemy with information and with supplies. The forty and more years of clemency in government had seemed to be of no avail. Efforts had been unceasing to keep the people French at heart, and to win back Acadia to France. No progress had been made in permanent settlement; the prospect of a French invasion at any time seemed more than likely. With the feeble garrisons at Annapolis and Canseau, an attack loomed as great danger. The Acadians were, in truth, enemies in the heart of the province.

At length, in 1755, Governor Lawrence determined on his course of action, and, as he wrote to Governor Shirley "to make some effort to drive them from the north shore of the Bay of Fundy," Shirley immediately commissioned John Winslow to raise 2,000 volunteers to transport to Acadia. After many vexatious delays, the troops finally set sail in three small frigates for Annapolis, where they landed on May 26, 1755. Instructions were given to Winslow to secure the inhabitants on or near the Bay of Fundy, and place them on the transports, which were later to be provided. His orders were stringent: "If you find that fair means will not do with them, you must proceed by the most vigorous measures possible, not only in compelling them to embark, but in depriving those who shall escape of all means of shelter or support, by burning their houses, and by destroying everything that may afford them the means of subsistence in the country." Three months went by, but in September the blow fell. The inhabitants about Grand Pré were summoned, on the fifth of September, to meet at the church, to hear the proclamation of the Governor, and similar summonses were sent in other directions. Here it was announced to them that, "by orders of His Majesty, all the French inhabitants of these districts are to be removed. And I am directed to allow you the liberty of carrying with you your money, and as many of your household goods as you can take without overloading the vessels you go in. I shall do everything in my power that all these goods be secured to you . . . and also that whole families shall go in the same vessel." They were then declared prisoners of the King. In Major Winslow's diary we read: "Thus ended the memorable fifth of September, a day of great fatigue and trouble." To Murray, at Fort Edward, he writes: "Things are now very heavy on my heart and hand."

There was great delay in embarking the prisoners. The transports arrived slowly, so that it was late in December before the last were sent away. The whole

number of inhabitants removed from the province was a little more than 6,000, about 2,000 of whom were landed in Boston, to be distributed through the towns of the province. They were most unwelcome charges. Taken from their homes with little but their clothing, crowded in the closely packed transports, they were in a pitiable condition by the time that they reached the towns upon which they were billeted. They represented a government which had been long at war with the English, and which had committed many atrocities upon the colonists in connection with their Indian allies. They were said to have been more kindly treated in Massachusetts than in many places, nevertheless their sufferings were great, as proved by documents in the state archives. The people asserted that "the receiving among us of so great a number of persons whose gross bigotry to the Catholic religion is notorious, is very disagreeable."

The method adopted for their care by the towns was similar to that given the town's poor at the time; they were put out to the lowest bidder for their support, and this bidder received the result of their labor. Many pitiful petitions were sent to Governor Shirley, some of them heartrending in character. Among them is found the petition of John and Peter Trahan, of Scituate, which reads:

Boston, May 4th, 1756.

To the Honorable His Majesty's Council
of the Massachusetts Bay:

The petition of John and Peter Trahan, late inhabitants of Nova Scotia, Humbly Showeth,—That your petitioners the said John, aged twenty-six years, the said Peter twenty-four, are threatened to be separated from their parents by the Selectmen of Scituate, in which town they are placed, and where indeed they endure many hardships, and have been denied any provisions for fifteen days past, which makes them the more unwilling to be separated from their Parents, since they are desirous to do what they can for their relief. Your Petitioners pray your Honour would order them relief in this case, and to be continued with their parents.

In 1759, one hundred and fifty-six Neutrals were in the towns of Plymouth County. Late in 1755, or early in 1756, forty were sent by water from Boston to Scituate.

Seventeen were left there in the care of Joseph Clap, and ten of this number were later sent to Joseph Jacob, of Assinippi. Joseph Clap lived at Black Pond Hill, on the Black Pond road. Nine Neutrals were carried to Hanover, and Mr. Dwelley tells us were placed in the care of John Bailey, on South Main Street. They were the members of one family by name of Brean, and were finally lodged in the old house in the "Cricket Hole,"

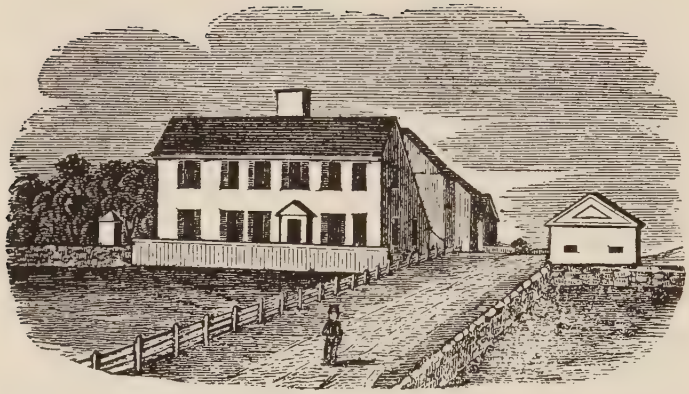
House in the "Cricket Hole"

destroyed by fire a few years ago. In the accompanying picture of this old house, probably old when they were lodged there, can be seen the spire of the church at Church Hill, and some of the dwellings near it. The other picture is that of the house in Hingham that sheltered some of that town's allotment. It was removed from its site beside Derby Academy when the Town Office Building was placed on the lot. Built on the side of the hill, the cellar on one side was above ground, and in this part of the house the Neutrals were lodged.

Leading from the Black Pond road, a half-mile east of Mt. Blue, is a pathway known as "Cuffee's Lane." This cart-path passed through the lands of Joseph Clap,

"Acadian House," at Hingham

owned by his descendants for two or three generations. In a small hut at the end of this lane, it is said, lived the French Neutrals placed in his charge. This hut, in Revolutionary days, was the home of Simeon Granderson, otherwise known as "Cuffee," a soldier in the Revolution, from Scituate. This tradition concerning their temporary dwelling place for a few years is the only remaining trace of this unfortunate people within our town. It is likely that some of the older ones rest in our burying-grounds in unmarked graves, and others may have joined the expedition which set out from Boston in 1776 to return on foot to their former home in Nova Scotia. This expedition numbered about eight hundred. They began their march for Acadia across the New Hampshire and Maine wilderness without proper food or clothing. They had some firearms, and subsisted on the way by hunting and fishing. Their journey lasted four months, during which time children were born and many deaths occurred. Some made settlements along the way, and those who succeeded in reaching Grand Pré found there a new nationality and new names; so turning sorrowfully away, they settled at St. Mary's.



Williams-Barker House

Seventeenth Century Houses

STANDING within the original limits of the town are a number of dwellings built as early as in the seventeenth century by pioneer settlers, or by those of the next generation. One of the most noteworthy of these houses is the old Williams-Barker house, on Barker's Lane, leading from what was later known as Jericho Road, on the north side of the Harbor. It was built as early as 1634, and a part of the original dwelling, which still remains included in the present house, is said to be the oldest structure within the original limits of the town. Its heavy beams and wooden walls, once pierced for portholes, bear witness to its use as a garrison house in 1676. One of the portholes can still be seen within the living-room of the house, the present front of the house having been added to the south side of the first structure.

John Williams, the builder of the house, came to Scituate with Mr. Hatherly from London. That he was of the same family as Oliver Cromwell is a tradition in our town, and has this in its favor, that the Great Protector's name was originally Williams, and was changed

to Cromwell to please a maternal aunt, who wished not to have her family name pass into oblivion.

John Williams' wife's name was Ann, and their son, Capt. John Williams, inherited the farm. He was captain of the military company which pursued King Philip to Mount Hope, and commanded the right wing of the ambuscade when the chief was killed. He was prominent in civic affairs and was a deputy to the Colony Court in 1677, also in later years.

He died in 1694, and his slate gravestone, the oldest stone in the burying-ground on Meeting-house Lane, can still be seen. In his will, dated 1691, he bequeathed the house and 200 acres of land to his grand-nephew, Williams Barker, of Marshfield. To his servant, John Bailey, he gave the land at Farm Neck on which the said Bailey lived. It is known today as the Bailey Farm.

The old house, passing by direct descent from father to son, remained in the Barker family until after the Revolution, when Capt. Williams, grandson of the first Williams Barker, went to Wiscasset, Me., and sold the Scituate farm to his cousin Benjamin for $1,000. The latter never lived on the farm, and it passed to his son, Samuel Partridge Barker, who married Catherine, daughter of Judge Gooch.

The Gooch family was a wealthy and aristocratic family of Boston. The portraits of the Judge and his two wives hung in the Barker house for many years, and two of the portraits are now loaned to the Scituate Historical Society. They have been pronounced genuine Copleys. Other portraits, cherished as heirlooms, hung in the house and were said to have been painted by Copley's pupils. Certain of these are now loaned to the Worcester Art Museum.

The farm and house were sold in 1910 to a syndicate known as the Allen Associates. The two hundred acres were divided into lots and offered for sale. Thus the old farm, in possession of one family for two hundred and seventy-six years, has met its fate. The house, enlarged

a number of times by members of the succeeding generations, is now known as the "Hatherly Inn."

The last owner of the Barker name to whom the home descended was Otis, grandson of Samuel Partridge Barker and Catherine Gooch. He was born in the old home in 1856, and now lives in California.

Briggs-Collier House

The Briggs-Collier House at "The Farms"

SCITUATE was settled first at that part of the town known as the Harbor, but soon the attractions of the northern end of the land drew to it a few of the settlers. Prominent among these was Timothy Hatherly, one of those men who, in all communities, by their natural abilities, enterprise, and judgment, soon become leaders. In 1639, he, with Beaumont, Andrews, and Shirley, received a grant of land "extending from

high-water mark three miles up into the wood." Included in this was the land known as Farm Neck, and here Timothy Hatherly made his home in 1637. A few years ago, Mr. Azro Turner, while ploughing in his field west of Musquashcut Pond, uncovered a hearth made of square English bricks. Here was undoubtedly the site of Hatherly's house.

A few rods east of this spot, near the shore of the pond, stands an old pear tree which has grown out of the roots of a tree of a still greater age. The fact that this tree still stands where no orchard has been within the memory of the oldest inhabitant, together with its great age, probably marks it as the last vestige of that orchard which Hatherly mentions in a subsequent deed in 1651.

A greater difference can hardly be imagined than that existing between the Farm Neck of Hatherly's time and the Farm Neck of today. Then the land was acquired for the purpose of wringing from it a livelihood, however precarious, and it brought about an average of $3.00 an acre. Today the land in this region is devoted largely to those on bent of pleasure, and brings a price of which the early settlers would never have dreamed. What would Timothy Hatherly have thought of the purchase of ten acres of his farm to furnish our frivolous summer residents with grounds for golf, tennis, and baseball?

Two hundred and fifty years ago the inhabitant of this region sat in his living-room at night, lighted by a home-made tallow dip, and warmed only by the fire of logs. The only sound which broke the silence was the howling of the wolves in the uncleared forest.*

It may be asked why, in the solitude and loneliness of the New England wilderness, men should prefer to separate from one another and choose homes as far from

* In early times wolves, wildcats, beavers, and deer were found in the forests. That wolves were numerous is evident from the passage of laws requiring the town in 1642 to maintain four wolf traps, and in 1665 two wolf traps. By the colony laws it appears also that a bounty of four bushels of corn was given for every wolf killed, and for a wolf killed by an Indian, "a coat of trading cloth."

their friends as the boundaries of the colony would allow them to go. There are many answers. First, in order to get a patch of ground unwooded, it was necessary to go a long distance from the next neighbor. Second, where no settlement of any size had been established, one location was as little isolated as another, because it did not suffer from comparison, and there is no doubt that Timothy Hatherly felt less lonely in his home west of Musquashcut Pond in 1637 than some of the inhabitants of Farm Neck do now in our winter evenings. As a matter of fact, Hatherly seemed to be a man who wanted plenty of elbow room, for in 1636 he complained to Plymouth that things were "too strait" in Scituate, and the next year we find him in Conihasset.

Another reason potent in drawing settlers to Farm Neck was the salt meadows. At that time the uplands were covered with forests and the salt grass was highly prized. Indeed, so valuable were the salt meadows that Hingham made repeated and insistent attempts to have them included in her boundaries, but Scituate knew a good thing when she saw it and stoutly stuck to her "three score acres" of salt marsh until the boundary between the two towns was finally decided to be the natural one of the "Gulph and Bound Brook."

Perhaps these advantages of Farm Neck brought it too many settlers for Timothy Hatherly, who even in 1636 had found Scituate "too strait" for him; for in 1651 he sold out and removed to the Harbor. This remarkable man, the founder of Scituate, to whose foresight and determination Scituate owes much of her prosperity, is remembered in this town only by a schoolhouse, a country club, and a road.

NOTE: The new Hatherly Road passes directly by the site of his house and by his pear tree on the shore of Musquashcut Pond.

In 1651 there appears in the Conihasset records a deed from Timothy Hatherly conveying the Hatherly farm, known as the Musquashcut farm, to Walter Briggs, farmer. It consisted of house, barn, outbuildings, and

300 acres, lying west of Musquashcut Pond, the consideration being 200 guineas. The harbor formed by the jutting out into the sea of the Glades Point, known as Musquashcut Harbor and Strawberry Cove, then became known as Briggs' Harbor, a name it retains today.

It is probable that Walter Briggs, soon after he came into possession of his new purchase, built the house now standing on the cliff and known as the "Old Collier house." Whether the meeting of the commission to decide the boundary between Scituate and Cohasset, and settle the fate of the"three score acres," was held in the old or the new house will probably never be known. Certain it is that Walter Briggs left by his will, dated 1676, two houses or homesteads, one of which is still standing.

The name of Walter Briggs does not appear among the Conihasset Partners, nor does it stand among the founders of either of the Scituate churches. He is referred to in the deed simply as Walter Briggs, farmer of Scituate, and it is probable that he was one of those men of solid worth, ever ready to do his duty as a citizen, but without becoming a leader.

We can imagine him now, for the next twenty-five years, pursuing his peaceful occupation of farmer, clearing the land of trees and stones, and converting them into fences and walls. That he was thrifty we have no doubt, for in his will he left to his heirs all the land he bought of Timothy Hatherly, which probably included nearly all of Farm Neck, with the exception of the Glades.

In the Plymouth Colony Records we find he was once complained of for slander by Edward Tart, of Scituate, to the damage of £100. The jury found for the plaintiff only the amount of 20 shillings, showing perhaps that Walter told the truth, but that the truth should not be told at all times, especially about your neighbors. This was in 1649, before he moved to Conihasset, and was perhaps one of the reasons which led him to buy the 300-acre farm and build his house where he would not be troubled by complaining neighbors — his nearest

one being Gen. James Cudworth, who lived near Little Musquashcut Pond, in Egypt.

This farm on the Scituate shore, 250 years ago, is a fascinating subject of thought: Walter Briggs and his three sons, tilling the land and harvesting the crops, hauling the winter supply of wood for the big fireplace, and teaming the kelp from the beach as a fertilizer for the farm. In this labor he was assisted by his slaves. How many he possessed is not known, but in his will he bequeaths to his wife "the little neger girl Maria to be her servant," and directed his son John to provide his mother with a "gentle horse or mare to ride to meeting or on any occasion she may have, and that Jemmy the neger fetch it for her." To what church Goodwife Briggs was accustomed to ride is uncertain, for at that time there were two churches in Scituate, one having for its principal tenet the doctrine of immersion; and the other opposing that doctrine. The place of the church in the lives of the people of that time can be judged by a perusal of this will of Walter Briggs, which should not be passed by, as it shows in a very real way the conditions of life in Plymouth Colony two and a half centuries ago.

As will be seen by the will, Walter Briggs left to his two sons, John and James, his real estate in Scituate, which contained, besides the 300-acre farm, 84 acres granted to him by the town. This latter was not divided until 1750. The sons allowed the farm to remain undivided during their lifetime, and it was not until after their death that their sons, John and Joseph, made an actual division of the 300 acres. But this division was not for long, for John was evidently not of a bucolic disposition, and sold his share of the ancestral acres to his cousin Joseph, and removed to Boston. When we next hear of him he is spoken of as "John Briggs, gentleman," while his cousin Joseph is still called "yeoman."

Joseph Briggs had three wives and three daughters; one daughter, Judith, remained unmarried. Either

because Judith was single at the time he made his will, in 1747, or because she was his favorite daughter, he left her one-half his real estate and one-third his personal property, the real estate including the old Briggs homestead. That same year Joseph Briggs steps off the stage, and with him the name of Briggs from the history of the old house. The lands were divided never to be reunited, and the Walter Briggs farm becomes a thing of tradition.

The next year, 1748, William Collier, a descendant of Thomas Collier, one of the early settlers of Hingham, steps upon the scene, captures the maiden Judith, takes her unto himself *with* her fertile farm and comfortable homestead. Their son, Isaac Collier, bore arms in the Revolution, and was enrolled in the company of Capt. Samuel Stockbridge, in Col. Thomas' regiment, in the operation before Boston, May to August, 1775; also in the expedition to Bristol, R. I., in March, 1775, in the company of Capt. Hayward Peirce. He married Tamsen Hayden and raised a family of sixteen children in the old house. Of these sixteen, James Collier went to Cohasset and married Sally Lincoln; but in 1845 came back to the old house in Scituate, built the ell on the old place, and there died in 1850. By his will his estate was left to his grandchildren, and when the property was finally settled, the old homestead fell to the writer, a grandchild. So the particular spot of ground on which the old house stands was in the same family for 250 years.

Many interesting things might be told of the old home. The old living-room well bore its part in service to the town, for it was the scene of the dame school kept by Aunt Mary and Aunt Ann Collier. On the beach near by, wreck after wreck came ashore, and more than once the floor of this same old living-room has been the bed of shipwrecked sailors stretched out with their feet to the great fireplace, some of them never to wake on earth.

In 1851, the lighthouse gale, as it was called, destroyed Minot's Ledge Lighthouse, and the field between

Musquashcut Pond and the sea was changed from a fertile cornfield into a waste of sand and stubble in a single night. As we leave this ancient dwelling place, let us, in imagination, fancy ourselves in the old living-room in the time of Walter Briggs, 250 years ago. The steady, glowing fire lights the faces of Walter and Goodwife Frances; Hannah, the daughter, is there with three sturdy brothers, John, James, and Cornelius, who complete the family group. The negroes are called in, the evening devotions are held, and the solitary household is soon in slumber, lulled to sleep by the beating of the waves on the ocean shore.*

Will of Walter Briggs

In ye name of God, Amen, ye 16th. day of January in ye year of our Lord God 1676, I, Walter Briggs in ye jurisdiction of New Plymouth in New England, in America, Yeoman, being aged, but of sound mind & perfect memory (praise be given to God for ye same) & caling into remembrance ye uncertaine estate of this transitory life & that all flesh must settle unto deathe when it shall please God to call & being desirouse to settle things in order, do make, constitute, ordain, & declare this my last will & testament in manner & forme following, revoking & annuling by these presents all & every testament or testaments, will or wills, heretofore made by me, & declared, either by word or by writing & this to be taken for my last will and testament, & no other.

& First & principally I recommend my soule unto Almighty God, my Creator assuredly believing I shall reseave full pardon & free remission for all my sins & be saved by ye precious blood & meritts of my blessed Savior & Redeemer, Jesus Christ, &, my body to ye earth from which it came, to be buried in a decent & Christian manner as to my executor, hereafter named, shall be thought & meet convenient, & As touching such

*Written by E. P. Collier.

worldly estate as ye Lord in mercy hath lent me, my will & meaning is, the same shall be imployed & bestowed as hereafter in this my will, is expressed.

I give and bequeath unto my loving wife, Frances Briggs, 6 pounds per annum, during her life, to be paid by my executor hereafter named, in corn or cattle or any other pay.

I give & bequeath unto my said wife one of ye two beds we lay on and ye furniture belonging to it, to be att her dispose when she dye. I bequeath unto my said wife during her life, ye loer rooms of ye west side of my dwelling house & libertie of a third part of ye sellar & room in ye chamber over ye sellar to put anythings as she may have occasion for & libertie to make use of potts, kettles, & other vessels commonly made use of in ye house, that she may use them as she has occasion but not to dispose of them. & I will her liberty of keeping 2 swine & I will her liberty to make use of ye two gardens & she to have ⅔ & my executor ⅓ of what she raiseth of them. I will that my executor allow my said wife a gentle horse or mare to ride to meeting or any other occasion she may have & that Jemmy ye neger catch it for her.

Also I will give my said wife, Mariah ye little neger gerle, to be with her so long as my wife lives, provided she continue at Conihasset. I give & bequeath unto my sone John Briggs as or for a homestead, my dwelling house with all barnes, outhousing, yards & ye gardens belonging to it, with my orchard, barne, field, & ye field of ye northerly end of ye barne field & from ye northwest corner of my son James Briggs his field, near ye bars at ye going out with a straight line towards ye southwest to southwest southerly to Mr. John Saffin's land; this I setled upon my son John Briggs, his heirs & assignes, forever, he & they allowing my wife to enjoy that out of ye premises which is before willed her during her life.

I give & bequeath unto my son James Briggs as & for a homestead ye house he dwells in, with ye whole field

within which his house stands & from ye southwest corner of ye sheep pen on a straight line towards ye sow-west to a maple tree by ye fence, unto ye fence of ye barne field & by ye fence round his barne untill it comes to ye barrs going into James his field, near ye northwest corner of ye sheep pen & in case this falls short in quantity of that settled on my sonn John, then my mind & will is that ye full quantity of ye lands be made up of ye lands adjoyning to ye field, in equal breadth, from end to end, & this I settle upon my son James Briggs, his heirs & assignes forever.

& My mind & will is that during ye life of my wife, that my son John Briggs take ye profitt & benefitt of ⅔ of all ye rest of my land undivided & my son James Briggs ⅓ of ye profitt thereof but after my wife's decease, my mind & will is, that all my lands in Scittuate not devided as before shall be equally divided betwixt my son John & my son James, allwayes being provided & so it is to be understood & no otherwise, in case my son James pay a legasie of 40 pounds unto his sister Hannah Winslow, within one year after my wife's decease which legasie of 40 pounds I doe, by these presents, give & bequeath unto my daughter Hannah Winslow. But in case he shall refuse or neglect to pay ye same as aforesaid, then my will is, that son John Briggs pay ye same legasie of 40 pounds unto my daughter Hannah Winslow & then my mind & will is that my son John shall have ⅔ of all ye land undevided as aforesaid, unto him, his heires, & assignes forever.

I do give & bequeath unto my son Cornelius Briggs one whole freeman's share of land that already appertains unto a share or shall ever after appertaine, in Swansey & on ye easterly side of Tanton River & on ye eastward — or elsewhere, & this I bequeath to my son Cornelius, his heirs, & assignes forever.

Also I give & bequeath unto my son Cornelius 30 pounds, to be paid him within 1 year after my decease, by my executor hereafter named. All ye rest of my goods

& chattles, movables, & immovables, not mentioned nor disposed of, I give to my eldest sonn John Briggs, whom I make & appoint to be sole executor of this my last will & testament. In witness whereof I have hereunto sett my hand & seale ye day & year first above mentioned. Mem. I give & bequeath to my executor 10 pounds in money to defray my funoralle expenses—this before sealing.

WALTER BRIGGS — his seal.

Signed sealed & declared by Walter Briggs to be his last will & testament in ye presence of

WILLIAM HATCH,
JAMES CUDWORTH.

William Hatch testified upon oath before ye court that he did see Walter Briggs signe, seale, & declare this above written to be his last will & testament done before ye court att Plymouth this 4th June, 1684.

NATHANIEL MORTON, Sec.

The Joshua Otis House

THE Joshua Otis house stands on what was known as the Turner farm, at the Sand Hills.

This house is said by the late Charles Otis Ellms to have been built as early as 1644 by some one of the name of House, one of the first settlers of Scituate. Nothing seems to be known about him, and he may have lived there but a short time. The house has been remodeled several times, but the original part can be discovered on the right of the picture. The next owner of record appears to be Joshua, son of Capt. Stephen Otis, who in 1735 married Hannah Barker, daughter of Samuel and Hannah Barker, of the Barker farm.

Joshua, Jr., was the next owner. He married Mary Thaxter, of Hingham, and died in 1822, at the age of seventy-four. To distinguish her from many other Otises she was called "Mrs. Farm Otis," living as she did on the

The Joshua Otis House

great Otis farm, while others of the family lived in the village. Joshua, Jr., was sent to Harvard College, and being of a social and lively temperament, took part in all the sports and society life of the college. A college play was acted by the collegians, called "The Day of Judgment," in which young Otis took the part of the devil, dressed in scarlet. This gave offense to the college authorities, and he was expelled, never to return. He was an ardent patriot in the Revolution, and entered heart and soul into the cause of independence. His wife was just as strong in her sympathy for her King George, and many hot discussions they had.

When her son was born, in 1775, she insisted that he be named George for her beloved King, and after much talk her husband was at last obliged to promise her that at the baptism he should have that name. So the father took the baby away to be baptized, and when he came back, the baby rejoiced in the name of George Washington Otis. The result in the household is not recorded, but the child grew up and was the late George Washington Otis, of Boston, whose son was Mayor James Otis, of San Francisco.

His wife's sister, Sally Thaxter, of Hingham, married Capt. John Pulling, who is said to have hung the lanterns "One if by land, two if by sea," in the old North Church for Paul Revere, on his ride to Lexington and Concord.

When Madam Derby (called Darby), of Hingham, who founded Derby Academy, was married to the wealthy merchant of Salem, there was a week of festivity in Hingham. The Crowninshields and other guests came over from Salem in a sloop, bringing wedding gifts and a pipe of wine. Dinners were given and Joshua Otis was frequently toastmaster. Sometimes the drinking of so many toasts interfered with his speech a bit, as when he once introduced Capt. Crowninshield, he stammered, "Here's to Capt. —— Here's to Capt. —— " and at last he exclaimed, "Here's to Capt. Foundation."

The wedding ring of Mary Thaxter was in possession of Charles Otis Ellms, her great-grandson, and her wedding gown is preserved in the Art Museum of Boston.

Mary Thaxter Otis lived to be ninety-two, a widow, with her two maiden daughters, Sally and Abigail, in the Otis house. They were well-educated, intelligent gentlewomen of the old school. They did most exquisite embroidery, which they often presented to their friends. Their sister Mary married, in 1801, Charles Ellms, of Scituate, and continued to live in a part of the farmhouse after her marriage. Here they reared their family, and at last came into possession of the estate by buying out the other heirs. Their three children inherited the property, but Charles sold out his portion and bought a farm on Brushy Hill, opposite the house of Parson Thomas. The Otis house and farm were then divided between the two remaining heirs, Mary and Joshua Otis, each having half the house and land.

Here J. Otis Ellms, as he was called, entertained the first "summer visitors," who came to Scituate fifty years ago. Otis Ellms' children were brought up in the old house, and they finally sold their shares in the estate to James Nathaniel Turner, son of Nathaniel and Mary

Ellms Turner, who has opened the land for building summer cottages, while the old house is now occupied by his son James.

Sergeant Samuel Stetson House, on Cornet Stetson Road, South Scituate

"SERGEANT SAMUEL," the fourth son of Cornet Robert Stetson, of Scituate, and Honor, his wife, was born in Scituate, June, 1646.

In the year 1700, the Cornet, being in his eighty-eighth year, deeded to "son Samuel" the "land on which the said Samuel now dwells;" hence we know the house was occupied by Sergeant Samuel and his family at this date. As Samuel at this time had been married twenty-two years, and already had a family of ten children, we naturally suppose he built the house about the time he was married — 1678.

George Stearns, a brother of R. H. Stearns, the Boston merchant, owned the house for some years, and resided there. He "put out" knitting work for the Stearns store in Boston among the women of the locality, and for some years this was a source of considerable "pin money" for these workers. (See "Cornet Robert Stetson.")

The King House

BETWEEN the years 1676 and 1680, "Dea. Thomas King" bought land west of Stony Cove Brook. He was born at Belle House Neck in 1645, and owned a house on the north side of Rotten Marsh in 1666, where he probably lived, after his marriage with Elizabeth Clap, three years later, until he built his new house at Stony Cove Brook. His house is still standing on the main road in South Scituate, on the easterly corner of what is now known as Parker Street, formerly Pincin Lane. It was built before 1680, on land which was a

THE KING HOUSE

part of the eighty acres allotted to Anthony Annable in 1636. Thomas Rawlins bought this tract in 1648, and built a house on the same site as that afterwards occupied by the King house. His son, Nathaniel, inherited the home, and after his death, in 1662, it was occupied by his widow, who later married Edward Wright.

In the Indian raid of May, 1676, the house was burned to the ground. It is probable that the large family of young children were safely sheltered at the Block House, with the families of other settlers, as news of the oncoming Indians had been received the day before at Hingham.

Shortly after the raid, Dea. Thomas King acquired the land by purchase. He was a wealthy man for that day. By his father's will he received a goodly inheritance both in Scituate and in England. At his death, in 1711, the estate, with the homestead, was given to his youngest son, George, who was living there at the time with his family. The King lands on the south of the highway

extended for some distance along the river-front, and King's Landing was one of the regular stopping places of the packets which carried merchandise from Boston to places along the North River. It is known by that name to the present day, although none of the name have lived there since the death of Dea. George King, in 1754.

Deacon George left no sons. The son of his daughter Rhoda, known as Dea. John James, 3d, inherited his grandfather's house and lands. After his death, it was owned by his son, Maj. John James, who removed from Scituate to Medford, where his son Galen was building vessels. His daughter Almira had married Paul Curtis, the well-known ship-builder of East Boston, and on the removal of her father to Medford, the family homestead was sold (for the first time) to her husband's uncle, Col. James Curtis. He lived in the King house until 1834, when he removed to Maine, leaving his wife and family in Scituate. He made no changes in the house which are recorded, but he could not have been indifferent to the welfare of the old house, as he planted a double row of American elms bordering the highway below the house. These are still standing after more than ninety years of life in unfriendly soil.

Colonel Curtis' son, Frederic, lived with his mother in the house until her death, in 1842, when he went to Medford. He sold his lands to Turner Hatch, whose son Marshall still lives in the house that owns to the age of two hundred and forty years. The roof timbers and sills were straight, and apparently in good condition, until within five years. The chimney, built of bricks of native clay, is still intact.

This ancient house is unique, in one particular, among our seventeenth-century houses. It has been occupied by but two unrelated families, and has fortunately had no owner with sufficient worldly means to spoil it by changes. It still remains practically as it stood in 1680, and even in its present condition bears silent witness to the integrity and sturdy character of its builders.

James Bowker House

JAMES BOWKER, from "Sweeden," came to Scituate in 1680, and was one of the earliest settlers to take up lands in the outlying sections. He was the pioneer settler on the land around what has been known as Bryant's Corner, where several sons of Lieut. John Bryant settled on a large tract extending from Spring Brook to Bowker's land. Lieut. John was the eldest son of John Bryant, whose home on the Third Herring Brook was built soon after 1640.

The house built by James Bowker in 1680 is said to be the one now standing a short distance west of the corner. It was the birthplace of Sarah Elizabeth Ellms Kent, the mother of Dr. L. Vernon Briggs, author of "Shipbuilding on North River." It is now owned by Dr. Briggs.

Deacon Stephen Clap House

WITH the exception of the lands bordering the river, and a few lying back of them, the south part of the town was unsettled until after the close of King Philip's War, when the danger of Indian raids was ended. Then pioneer settlers began to take up lands in the outlying districts, and "ways" were laid out to reach these lands, many of them over the old Indian trails that criss-crossed the undeveloped territory. One of the earliest of these ways followed the old Assinippi trail, and was the beginning of South Scituate's "Fore Road." In 1686, a survey of this road was made, and in it was noted "Samuel Clap's new house." Here was born, in 1703, one of the first presidents of Yale College.

Samuel Clap built his house fronting a considerable tract of fertile, level land known as White Oak Plain, granted in 1660 to his father, Thomas Clap, who came to Scituate in 1640; and his son, Dea. Stephen, lived in it in 1690. It stood where the house of Charles A. Berry now stands, about a mile west of South Scituate

Village. Nathaniel B. Clap, a direct descendant of the original Thomas, demolished the old house after 1842 and built the present one on the same site. That the daily doings of this Scituate family might have been of interest to a larger circle than that of its neighbors may be seen by the following queerly worded extract from the *Boston Weekly News Letter* and the *Massachusetts Gazette*, August 16, 1770: "We hear from Scituate, that on Monday morning last, a promising youth about 14 years of age, son to Nat'l Clap, Esq., of that Town, driving a Cart down a steep Hill, on the Wheels taking the rising Ground, oversit the Cart, and killed the lad instantly on the Spot."

Dea. Stephen Clap's distinguished son Thomas was born in the old home, and was prepared for college under Rev. Nathaniel Eells, and Rev. James McSparren, an English missionary, and rector of the Narragansett Church. He entered Harvard College at fifteen, graduated in 1722, and afterwards entered the ministry. His first pastorate was at Windham, Conn., where he remained from 1726 to 1739. The following year he was elected President of Yale College, and here he found his lifework. He exerted great influence in moulding the policy of the young college founded but thirty-nine years before. By reason of his executive ability and good business judgment, he placed the college on a firm foundation. That his theology was of the robust type we cannot doubt; but we may trust it was dealt out to others with clemency, and with the spirit of tolerance always found in the Pilgrims, among whose descendants his earlier years were passed. In a volume published by him in 1765 concerning the history of the college and its rules of life, he says: "Persons of all denominations of Christians are allowed the advantages of an education here, and no inquiry has been made at their admission or afterwards, about their sentiments in religion."

After twenty-five years of arduous service, President Clap resigned his office in 1765. He died in January,

1767, while on a visit to his brother in the home where he was born. His grave was in the old burial-ground at the rear of the college chapel, on the New Haven Common. The long epitaph on his monument ends thus:

"Death the great Proprietor of all
'Tis thine to tread out empires
And to quench the stars."

Nathaniel's son Sylvanus, and grandson Stephen, occupied the house until 1825.

Tradition tells us that the slaves belonging to the various Clap families became too numerous for the family requirements and purse-strings, consequently they were given portions of land from the large Clap grant of early days, and allowed to shift for themselves. This was the beginning of the scattered negro settlement in the section south of White Oak Plain known to this day as "Wildcat."

Captain Stephen Otis' "New House"

IN 1697, Capt. Stephen Otis purchased a part of Will James' house lot, "north of Job Otis' warehouse," for a site for his "new house." The house built by Capt. Stephen was known one hundred years later as the Capt. James Little house. Capt. Little came from Marshfield, and married Lydia Young in 1782. Widow Lydia Little died in 1821, and some years after, Gideon Young, a near relative, kept a tavern in the house for several years.

The late Charles Otis Ellms is authority for the statement that the last meeting of the Conihasset Partners was held here in 1767, and that the house was then a tavern.

William Paley, son of the Rev. Morrill Allen, of Pembroke, married Abigail Brooks Otis, a daughter of Ensign Otis, 3d. She inherited the house from her mother, a daughter of Capt. James Little, and this was the family home for fifty years.

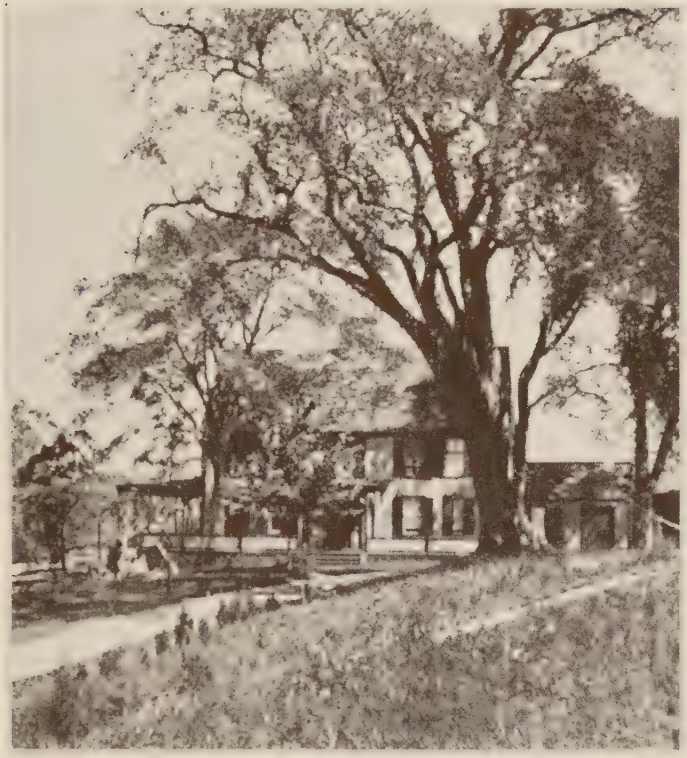
The last of the family line to own and occupy the house was Mrs. Amy Allen Frye, a great-granddaughter of Capt. James and Lydia Little.

Captain Stephen Otis' "New House"

This house is a remarkable specimen of early colonial architecture, and its ancient construction has been well preserved. Its hand-hewn oak beams are solid and massive, and the marks of the broad axe are plainly to be seen. The rooms are spacious, with low ceilings and big fireplaces, and the windows show ancient glass.

Mordecai Lincoln House

MORDECAI LINCOLN, the fourth son of Samuel, who came to Hingham in 1640, was a blacksmith who journeyed to Scituate in search of bog iron and water power for his business. He found both near Bound Brook, and here he settled, establishing the first iron works, as well as grist and saw mills. He was a successful man of business, and died a rich man for those days, as his will, made in 1727, shows. He had six children, and to his son Isaac he left the "house he now lives in." This was the oldest house in Cohasset. It had a gambrel roof, and was just over the line between the two towns, built in 1717, and has always been owned by the family.



Mordecai Lincoln House

It was occupied until 1919, when a fire partly destroyed it. To his son Jacob he left "My homestead in Scituate with land, mills and other valuables." This is the house Mordecai Lincoln built, according to family tradition, in 1690, on Bound Brook, near the present Lincoln mills. It was a well-built house and has always been kept in good condition, but has been remodeled, although many parts are still the same as when built.

Mordecai Lincoln's first wife was Sarah, a daughter of Abraham Jones, of Hull, and it is here we have the introduction of the name of Abraham into the Lincoln family. In 1701-02, he married for his second wife Widow Mary

Hobart Chapin Gannett, and their son Jacob occupied the house. Mordecai died in 1727, and his gravestone can be seen in Groveland Cemetery.

Two sons of Mordecai Lincoln, Mordecai and Abraham, both removed to what was then the wilderness of Monmouth County, N. J., and afterwards to Pennsylvania, in search of fortune or adventure. Each married and each had seven children. In 1725, Mordecai sold out his business, his "Mynes, Minerals, Forges, &c.," and migrating again, settled in Amity, Penn., where he died. His will is dated February 22, 1735-36. In it he gave his lands in New Jersey to John, his oldest son, and his other property to his sons Mordecai and Abraham. As is seen, they still held to the family names. In 1758, John Lincoln settled in Rockingham County, Va., where are found the names of his five sons, Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Thomas, and John. The eldest son, Abraham, went first to North Carolina.

In the original Field Book of Daniel Boone, in possession of the Wisconsin Historical Society, under date of 1782, is found the following: "Abraham Lincoln enters 500 acres of land on a Treasury warrant on the south side of Licking Creek or River in Kentucky." Here is chronicled a second migration to a still wilder country, and here Abraham Lincoln erected a log cabin near "Bear Grass Fort," the site of the present city of Louisville. A year or two later, while he was working to open a farm in the forest, he was shot by Indians in ambush. His son Mordecai, who was working in a field near by, ran to the house for a rifle, and returned just as an Indian had seized his little brother Thomas and was running with him toward the forest. He fired the rifle, the Indian fell dead, and little Thomas escaped, to become the father of the great President.

The family characteristics of the Lincolns of Scituate have been, to a marked degree, native wit, shrewdness, concise speech, and freedom of opinion, qualities which Abraham Lincoln shared with his ancestors in a

remarkable degree. They are also noted for their fondness for old Bible names, which have stuck to successive generations like "tar to the rigging," as the saying goes.

The Mordecai Lincoln house did not pass out of the Lincoln family until early in the nineteenth century. It was then bought by Horace Doane, who there brought up a large family. One of his grandsons, who had inherited the homestead, sold the place in 1915 for a summer residence. As a site it is one of the most attractive in our town, commanding a wide view of the marshes, with the winding river and high shores of Cohasset in the distance. The rooms are spacious, with large fireplaces and high ceilings, while the windows open on an extensive view.

Deacon Hatherly Foster House

THE Hatherly Foster house, on the main road from Greenbush to South Scituate, about forty rods east of the Union Bridge road, is remembered by many as having been demolished in 1898. It stood a few rods east of the old burying-ground, on the north side of the way, opposite the old rocky orchard and the well by the wayside, on a little knoll back from the road. "Deacon Hatherly" built his house in 1697, on the North River lot of eighty acres, allotted in 1636, to his grandfather, Edward, who was a nephew of Timothy Hatherly. When Edward Foster married Lettice Hanford, no less a person than Miles Standish, magistrate from Plymouth, journeyed thence to Scituate to perform the ceremony, which took place "April 8, ye 4th day of weeke, 1635."

On the death of "Deacon Hatherly," in 1751, the house became the property of his son, who was known as "Lieutenant Elisha," and who succeeded his father as deacon of the Second Church. On his death the homestead passed to his eldest son, John, who fought in the French and Indian War, and was one of the soldiers at Crown Point in 1759. He afterwards became known

Deacon Hatherly Foster House

throughout a wide neighborhood as "Landlord Foster," as the family home, before his father's death, had become a tavern; so he returned from the wars to engage in a more peaceful occupation. The east side of the second story of the old house was one large room used for meetings and for social purposes generally. Here many of the town meetings were held, especially during the cold days, when the unheated churches were too uncomfortable as meeting places. It should be remembered that the location of this well-known tavern was not far from the center of the then undivided town of Scituate, and there are tales of many gatherings at "Landlord Foster's" in Revolutionary days.

John Foster's son Timothy succeeded to his father's homestead and married Hannah Clap, of Hanson. The memory of their daughter Mary has been made a living one through the tribute to her character and worth written by her devoted husband, the Rev. William Phillips Tilden, in his autobiography. There is no such realistic picture of the old town and its people in the early half of the nineteenth century as can be found in

these reminiscences written for his children and grandchildren.

In those early days, mackerel fishing was a great source of income to all the coast towns, and all the young men and boys had their share in it. But William Tilden's mackerel served an added purpose, unique in the annals of courtship. We have the story in his own words:

"We generally managed to have a few to take home when we arrived. Sometimes when we got into the harbor at night, and I walked home with a happy heart under the stars, I would hang a nice bloater on the front door handle of a certain house, where a certain sweet girl lived, to let her know as she swept off the doorstep in the morning that somebody got home from fishing in the night. Who said she expected me the next evening? I didn't. It was your guess."

And so Mary Foster received her messages as she stood in the early morning in the doorway of the old "Deacon Hatherly" house; and the term of her wedded life was forty years.

We are indebted to her grandson, Joseph Tilden Green, for the accompanying photograph, taken some years before the old home of his grandmother was demolished.

After 1854, the house passed through several hands, and began its downward career. It was finally purchased by James Green, together with its lands, extending to the river on the south. He redeemed it at the last by completely destroying all vestiges of it, and nothing now remains to tell its story but the knoll on which it stood for two hundred years.

The Bryant-Cushing House

ON the "Fore Road" leading to South Scituate, as one approaches the Second Herring Brook and Copper Corner, stands the old Bryant-Cushing house among the trees, with its large clay chimney still intact. It stands back from the roadway, and can be easily identified by the five "bulls' eyes" over the front entrance.

It was built by Dea. Thomas Bryant in 1698. Thomas was a son of John Bryant, who settled on the Second Herring Brook about 1643. The remains of an old orchard east of the Merritt mill still mark the site of his home. He was born in 1675, the year before the Indian raid on Scituate. It is probable that Bryant's family took refuge in the Block House on the river not far away, although the home of the family was evidently well defended by the father and several sons, as there is no record of its having been burned in the raid.

Dea. Thomas Bryant was one of the influential men of Scituate. His sister Ruth, two years older than himself, married the Quaker, William Wanton. Their wooing, so strongly opposed by both families, is told very quaintly by Deane, as follows:

"To this match, there had been several objections;— the Quakers disapproved of his marrying out of the Society, and the Congregationalists of his marrying into theirs, and moreover, the woman was very young; however, the sanguine temper of Wanton was not to be foiled, and he is said to have addressed the young woman in the presence of her family in the following words: 'Ruth, let us break away from this unreasonable bondage. I will give up my religion, and thou shalt give up thine, and we will go to the church of England, and go to the D — l together.' They fulfilled this resolution, so far as going to church and marrying and adhering to the church of England during life."

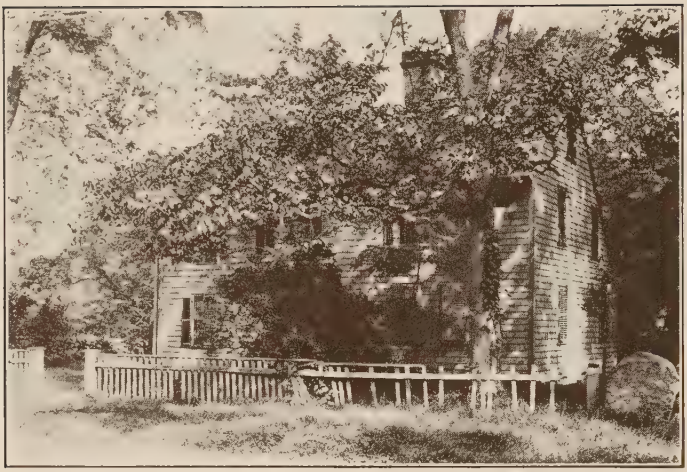
Thomas Bryant's wife was Mary Ewell, who died in 1724. Her slate gravestone, with its curious wording, is still standing in the parish burying-ground of the South Scituate church, in a good state of preservation. It reads: "Here lyes ye body of Mrs. Mary Briant, wife to Mr. Thos. Briant, who dyed and in her arms doth lye the corps of two lovely babes born of har."

The Rev. Lemuel Bryant was their son, born in Scituate, 1721-22. He prepared for college under Mr. Eells, his pastor, and graduated from Harvard in 1739. He was settled over the Quincy church, and became somewhat noted for his liberalism. Deane says that he "had gone somewhat before the age in liberal speculations," and tells the story of his having preached for his pastor, Mr. Eells, on a certain Sunday, in Scituate. His

The Bryant-Cushing House

text was, "All our righteousnesses are filthy rags," and he explained the text as showing that the formalities of a corrupt generation of the Jews were described, and not the moral virtues of true worshipers. This lead Mr. Eells to remark: "Alas! Sir, you have undone today all that I have been doing for forty years;" and Bryant, with his accustomed wit and courtesy, replied: "Sir, you do me too much honor in saying, that I could undo in one sermon, the labors of your long and useful life." The Rev. Mr. Bryant's health failing while a young man, he returned for a few years to his father's house, in Scituate, and there died at the age of thirty-two years. He is buried in the plot in the South Scituate cemetery near that of the Rev. Mr. Eells.

Hawke Cushing, son of Dea. Joseph Cushing, Jr., born at Hoop Pole Hill, then purchased the house. The last of the Cushing name to occupy the house were his unmarried granddaughters, Ruth and Clarissa, with their brother Josiah, and after the death of Miss Clarissa, in 1885, the house was sold to Dr. Hayward W. Cushing. After some years it was re-sold by him to Edward R. Bacon, of Chicago, its present owner.



The Ambrose Cole House

Eighteenth Century Houses

The Ambrose Cole House

AMBROSE COLE, the first of the name in Scituate, is supposed to have been the builder of this house in 1700. His son was David, who married, in 1732, Sarah Balch. The Balch house was the next west, as the records say, "the road that goeth by Balch's," now the gambrel roof house of the late Nancy Jackson, beside the Common at Scituate Centre.

At his death his son William inherited the house, whose son Ambrose became owner in his turn. His wife was Mary Tufts, of Charlestown, where he was in business and made his home. He accumulated a competency and gave his nine children an education far above the average of that time. After his death his family came to Scituate to occupy the homestead and carry on the farm, which was of great extent. They must have been lovers of

nature, for the grounds were planted with shrubs and old-fashioned flowers in the garden at the back, where the box-trees and daffodils still bravely rear their heads, although the dear old house was burned in 1919.

Of these children, Mary Ann was a great factor in the life of Scituate, for it was she who first introduced art into town. She was a tall, distinguished-looking woman, but of eccentric ways. She gave lessons in drawing and painting, her price being invariably $2.00 for twelve lessons of three hours each, and always went on foot to her classes no matter whether the classes were near at hand or in a neighboring town. Her embroidery was a thing of beauty, but as far as her own clothes were concerned her ideas did not always follow the dictates of fashion, and were poorly put together, as she cared nothing for plain sewing. Her writing was of such perfection that when the town of Scituate was divided, it became necessary for the part called South Scituate to have a copy of the town records, and Miss Mary Ann Cole was selected to do the copying. These books may be seen at the office of the town clerk of Norwell, and they certainly command admiration for their beauty, legibility, and freedom from errors.

One of her favorite subjects was, "The Ruins of Carthage," with Marius in the foreground, and copies of this still hang in many old-fashioned parlors.

The last occupant of the home was Miss Jane Cole, who lived and died here.

In itself, the house differed from others of the same period in that one of the chimneys was placed so that the fireplaces were corner-wise in the rooms. In the best parlor was a beautiful "beaufat" that came from an old French frigate, made of wood, carved, and painted white, and lined with scarlet woolen, a very effective background for china. Tradition says the house was at one time a tavern, but of this we are not positive.

NOTE: The drawing of the old Methodist Church in this volume was made by Miss Mary Ann Cole.

The Tilden House

The Tilden House

THE old Tilden house, which was built in 1711 by Joseph Tilden, stood until it was burned, half a century ago, on Tilden Road, not far north of the Beaver Dam road, and the lilac bushes that once stood guard by the old front door still bravely keep their vigil, though only the cellar remains.

Joseph Tilden married Sarah White in 1710, and built his house the next year, placing the date on the chimney. They had four children. One daughter, Hannah, married, in 1785, Capt. Hezekiah Ripley, of Rocky Nook, Kingston; he was an officer in the Revolutionary Army and was often the guest of General Washington.

On the next lot was another old house, also built and owned by the Tildens, and one of its occupants was Miss Patience Tilden. During the strenuous times of the War of the Rebellion, Aunt Patience, who was a famous knitter, made with her own hands many pairs of woolen stockings for the soldiers. She was a great admirer of President Lincoln, and for him she knit a particularly fine pair of white woolen socks as a gift, and she had the rare pleasure of a personal acknowledgment from him,

Executive Mansion,

Washington October 28. 1861

My Dear Miss Tilden

Please to

accept my most cordial

thanks for the pair of stockings

for which I am indebted to

your Kindness and your skill

And believe me to be

With profound respect

Your Obedient Servant

A. Lincoln

Miss Patience Tilden

Kittrell Mass

written by his own hand. This she had framed, and kept it in her home as her choicest treasure. (It is now in the possession of Mrs. Annis Wade, who received it from her cousin, Miss Sally Tilden, of Egypt.)

Another Tilden of Scituate ancestry was Samuel Jones Tilden, said to have been elected president of the United States by the people. He was Governor of New York, a lawyer, a millionaire, a political leader, and in 1877 he ran as the Democratic candidate for President against Rutherford B. Hayes, whose election was contested. An electoral commission, which was organized by Congress, decided in favor of Hayes. The New York Public Library is built by money left by Mr. Tilden for a foundation, together with that of Astor and Lenox.

Although the older Tilden houses are no longer standing, the farm which is a part of the original grant to Elder Nathaniel Tilden, one of the "Men of Kent," is still owned and occupied by his descendants of the Tilden name.

Two Stacks

Two Stacks

CAPTAIN DAVID LITTLE built his mansion, called "Two Stacks," from its two large chimneys, in 1700, the date being found in his old desk, now the

property of F. A. Turner, of Hingham. He left the home to his son, Barnabas Little, a wealthy and influential man, who held many town offices and loaned large sums of money to help carry on the Revolutionary War. With him lived his sister, Mercy Little, who married Joseph Otis, and as he never married, at his death he left the estate to his nephew, John Otis.

NOTE: The following letter was found in the house some years ago. It is of great interest, showing how the name Barnabas was kept in the family:

(In a scrawl on the back)

Address:

Mrs. Marcy Otis, Scituate,
To the Beautiful Mrs. Marcy Otis,
Plymouth, august 26, 1803.

Honoured Mother,

I am under the disagreeabel necessity to inform you that my dear and only son Barney was prest on Board of a British Frigate called L'Immotality the 29th of last May in the English Channel for the want of a protection — the Brig he was in from Malaga to St. Petersburg in Russia.

The above disagreeable news I received By Last Tuesday's mail By a letter from Captin of the Brigg to Mr. Hedge his owner.

Dear Mother, this is harder than Death to his parents for the Almighty has a right to take his creation out of the World when he pleases. But to have our dear child taken from us By an arbitary stretch of power of man it is attended with such aggravations too hard for human mortals to Bair.

I must leave the disagreeable subject you Better immagin my feelings that I can Discribe them, although you never felt them or what I now feel. the principal men in Plymouth are all interested in this Disagreeable event everything is done towards obtaining his release. their are such Certificates with pressing letters Gone on to London to the American Ambassador that will obtain his release when he can be found. Likewise Certificates to the Secerity of State that are sufficient to prove him to be an American & the Secerity it is his duty as an officer to demand him from that power that detains him. I can write no more But must Conclude By subscribing myself your affectionate Son Barnabas Otis.

N. B. as there ware two young men belonging to Scituate you may inform their parrents that they were not prest.

N. B. the letter Mr. Hedge received was dated at Copenhagen.

John was twice married and had a large family of children. At his death the south side part of the house was given to Milton Litchfield, who had married two daughters of John Otis, and it was he who added the long south ell in which they lived.

The north part belonged, at this time, to John and Silas Otis, bachelors. They left their half to Mrs. Abigail Bailey as a reward for her duties as their housekeeper, and she in her turn willed it to her nephew Thomas Otis Bailey. He sold his part to Liba Litchfield and his wife Winnet, daughter of Milton, they then becoming owners of the whole estate.

On the death of Liba Litchfield, his widow sold the property to Edgar A. P. Newcomb, an architect and composer, who, though now making his home in Honolulu, signs himself, "Still Master of the Two Stacks."

NOTE: It is a well-established fact that slaves were owned by the Otis family, as well as by many other well-to-do families of Scituate, and this letter, addressed to Mr. John Otis, Scituate Lower Parish, was found at Two Stacks:

Boston, Aug't 1823.

Mr. John Otis, — Sir:

There is an old Black Woman by name of Jenny that was born in your house & was one of Uncle Barney Little's serventes she is now old & cannot get any work in this place & she wants to go into your family to live otherwise she must come to Scituate & the town to support her, she is anxious to know if you will take her in your family you will write to George Pillsbury & let them know your determination. I write this by the request of Aunt Pillsbury.

Your Obt. St

CHARLES OTIS.

This receipt was likewise found in the house:

Scituate, Aprile 4, 1749.

Then received of Amasa Bailey seventy pound old tener it being in full for a negro girl named Sussanah aged one year & ten months I say received by me. JOSHUA OTIS.

The Doctor Isaac Otis House

THIS house was built in 1723 by Dr. Isaac Otis, the first regularly bred physician to settle in Scituate, and a descendant of John Otis, or Oates, who settled at Scituate in 1653. It stands close by the "public way from Greenbush leading to the 'Up-River' settlement," now called Norwell.

The interior differs from most dwellings of the same period in that it was built by a doctor. The front room to the east is small, being used as an office, and has a medicine chest built into the chimney over the fireplace.

THE DR. ISAAC OTIS HOUSE

Between this room and the back parlor is a dark-closet built into the chimney, which tradition says was the sleeping-place of the doctor's negro slave, in order that he might be on hand to saddle the horse and arrange the saddle-bags when his master started out to a patient.

The real purpose of this chimney closet found in many houses of this period was as a cool closet in summer and a warm one in winter. They were designated "glory-holes." Many things being stored in them as a matter of convenience, a glory-hole has come to mean a place for an accumulation of rubbish of all kinds.

In his will Doctor Isaac left the homestead to his son, Dr. James Otis, who lived here until his death, in 1807, when the property descended to his daughter Lucy, who married Thomas Barker Briggs, and whose son, Charles Briggs, in his turn became owner of the house. He was the last of the family to live here. After his death his

family removed to Essex County. Since then it has passed through several hands, but is now the home of Miss Antoinette Pray, who has done much to restore it to its former charm.

At the back is a small one-story ell which at one time was two stories high. It is thought to have been a part of the house of Joseph Nash, who was the first to have a house on this site, the land being part of the original grant to Anthony Annable in 1636.

The Jacobs Homestead

The Jacobs Homestead

ON the shores of Jacobs Pond, Assinippi, stands a large, old house built in 1726 by Joshua Jacobs. He and his brother, Dr. Joseph Jacobs, were also the builders and proprietors of the old Jacobs Mill on the Third Herring Brook, standing until July 4, 1920, when it was burned. Close by the mill was the brave old oak that was there when the Pilgrims landed in Plymouth. (Vouched for by Barry's "History of Hanover.")

"Oft in the moonlight by whose side
The dusky Indian wooed his bride."

Joshua Jacobs was an extensive landowner and a man of industry and business ability; he married Mary James,

of Scituate. Their three sons served in the Revolutionary War with distinguished ability, Col. John Jacobs, Capt. Joshua Jacobs, Corp. James Jacobs.

These three brothers married three sisters — Hannah, Elizabeth, and Deborah Richmond, of Little Compton, R. I.— of a most distinguished family.

James Jacobs, son of Ichabod Richmond Jacobs, married his cousin, Clarissa Richmond, of whom history says, "Clarissa was an excellent woman and a devoted mother." Their portraits hang in the old house, and it is from this worthy couple that the present owner of the homestead, Dr. Henry Barton Jacobs, is descended.

Dr. Ephraim Otis House

Dr. Ephraim Otis House

IN a section of the town known for generations as "Wildcat," a little southwest of White Oak Plain, stands an old house believed to be the last Quaker home now standing in the town. It was built in 1732 by Dr. Ephraim Otis, son of Job, who married Rachel Hersey, of Hingham. She was a sister of Dr. Ezekiel Hersey, whose widow married a Derby, of Salem, and founded Derby Academy, in Hingham, with money received, it is said, from her first husband, Dr. Hersey.

Their son, Dr. Ephraim Otis, graduated from Harvard College in 1756. In 1757, he was commissioned as surgeon's mate, and was at Fort William Henry in 1758. Dr. Otis was at Yale College in 1759, and in 1774 was one of the town committee to assist in preparations for war. He first settled as a physician at Taunton, later removing to Scituate, and married Sarah Harris, of Providence. Through her influence he became a convert to the Quaker faith.

On his death, in Scituate, the homestead was inherited by his son Daniel, who was a compounder of drugs and medicines at his home. In addition to his business as a druggist, he managed his 200-acre farm most successfully, and added largely to his inheritance. His wife, Mary Greene, was a Quakeress of charming personality, greatly beloved by family, acquaintances, and those who served her. At her death, an old colored servant begged to be buried at her feet when he died. The family burial lot is on the home farm, and at the foot of her grave can be found that of the faithful servant.

Ephraim Otis, oldest son of Daniel, inherited the homestead, and on his death it went into the possession of his nephew, Joseph Clapp Otis, according to provisions in his grandfather Daniel's will.

Jesse Dunbar House*

OVERLOOKING the harbor at the head of "Will James' Dock," and just north of Stephen Otis' "new house," stands a house frequently referred to in old deeds and wills as the "mansion house," and occupied for many years by Jesse Dunbar, Esq., who married Sally Witherell in 1785. For years the old stone wharf nearly opposite was known as Dunbar's wharf.

Having been enterprising in navigation and fisheries, he acquired much worldly goods, the house for many

*This house can be seen on the extreme right of picture on page 104.

years showing evidence of this. Wide paneling of doors, white marble mantel in the large reception room on the second floor, — which also boasted seven windows, — and the white and blue tile around one of the fireplaces, together with hangings and upholstering of rich, red brocade, certified to over-seas connection.

Located in the room at the left of the front door still remains the "strong box," consisting of a well-made wooden box suspended beneath the floor, and reached by removing a board across the corner.

In later years the house became known as the Dr. Francis Thomas house, he having married Sarah Dunbar, and occupied it till his death. The first transfer out of the family came when it was sold to Edward H. Bonney. The wonderful elm trees just in front have long been objects of admiration.

The Old Parsonage

The Old Parsonage

THE house known as the "Old Parsonage," of the Second Parish, stands on Main Street (Norwell) just east of Copper Corner. It was built in 1728 to

replace an older house which stood on the same site, likewise owned by the parish, and purchased by them in 1684 as a parsonage for Rev. Mr. Mighill. The Rev. Nathaniel Eells lived in the older house from 1704 to 1715, when he purchased the Henchman house.

Israel Sylvester rented the parsonage and occupied it for some years, Mr. Eells receiving the rental as part of his salary. Dr. Barnes was the next occupant, living here from 1754 to 1770. In 1784 Israel Turner purchased the house. It remained in his family for 135 years. The last of his family to occupy the home were his granddaughters, Miss Caroline Turner and her sister, Mrs. Thomas Gaffield, after whose death it was sold, in 1919, to Mr. James Stinson.

The Homestead

The Cushing Homesteads

AT the foot of Hoop Pole Hill, about a half-mile west of South Scituate Village, is Henchman's Corner, so called from Joseph Henchman, who settled there in 1680.

He built a large house a few rods east of the corner, on the north side of the "Fore Road." In 1703, the way leading from this road to Bryant's Corner was laid out, creating the corner named for Henchman.

The first Cushing to settle in this part of the town was Joseph, the youngest son of John, of Belle House Neck, who purchased in 1707 the west part of the Henchman property, and other lands towards the north. Within sight of the corner there have been three Cushing homesteads, built at different periods, but closely associated with memories of this branch of the family.

Near the road, in front of the home of Dr. Hayward W. Cushing, stood the house built by Joseph about 1709, and occupied by two generations. The corner-stone is still in place, and the seventh generation is now living on the land of the first house, near the original site. Almost on the same site stood the second house, in which lived "the four Georges" (George Sr., George Jr., George King, and his son George), burned shortly before 1897. Joseph Cushing had one child, but his son, Joseph Jr., had a family of fifteen children. The latter was for many years the Latin School master of Scituate, and prepared his own sons and many others for college. Both were deacons of the Second Church, and men greatly respected. The slate gravestones of three Josephs, grandfather, father, and son, can still be seen on the southern slope of the South Scituate burying-ground. They died within seven years, 1760 to 1767.

Judge Nathan Cushing was a son of Deacon Joseph and Lydia King. He purchased land for his home in part from the Proutys, and from John Jordan, who, Deane says, "in 1775 occupied the place where Judge Nathan Cushing's mansion stands." The site of his homestead can still be seen on the east slope of Hoop Pole Hill, near the Fore Road, marked by the clumps of lilac bushes, the ash tree, and the old well. Lilies of the valley and "daffies" still bloom each spring to keep alive the story of the Judge's garden.

It seems the irony of fate that the homestead of this distinguished man should be remembered only as the "Judge Wood place." Judge Wilkes Wood, of Middleborough, married the widow of Judge Nathan's only son, Christopher. After the Woods removed to Middleborough, the house was occupied for a time by Dr. Milton Fuller, then unoccupied for some years, and finally burned, about the middle of the last century.

Alice Cushing, his sister, married Nathaniel Cushing, of Hingham, in 1774. He was her second cousin, also descended from John Cushing, of Belle House Neck. Nathaniel Cushing bought land, in 1773, from the heirs of Philip Turner, whose broad acres extended from Henchman's on the west to Josiah Torrey's on the east, thus taking in the entire north side of South Scituate's Fore Road, from the "Eells field," east of the corner (where until the last two years stood the old "Eells pear tree"), to the stone wall between Seth Foster's and the Nash property. A homestead was probably included in the purchase, and this remained for thirty-six years the dwelling place of the family. At each half-century succeeding, changes were made in the house, and parts removed, until at the present time but little, if any, of the eighteenth-century house remains but the foundation stones.

An interesting story has been handed down in the family as related by a daughter of "Grandmother Alice." Long before her marriage to Nathaniel, he had given her a "friendship ring," which she called her "posy ring," from the flower engraved on its square top surface. One autumn day she was swinging on a gate on the home farm, and when reproved for it by an older brother, threw at him the core of the apple she was eating, and with it went her posy ring. She searched far and wide, but the precious ring could not be found. Years passed, and Alice was a grandmother. The old orchard was being ploughed one spring-like day, when the plough turned up a glittering object, quickly spied

by one of her grandsons. It proved to be a ring — but father or mother had never seen one like it. Then someone said, "Show it to grandmother." No sooner said than done. "Why, that's my posy ring," said she, "come back to me after these fifty years." Then she told them its story. She lived her ninety-six years of life, and died near the land where she was born, a less remarkable instance at that time than it would now be, in these days of frequent removals.

The picture shown represents the house as it stood in 1848, with its "primeval" oak, remembered to have stood there in 1709. About 1793, after the death of Nathaniel Cushing, Sr., the house was deeded to his son Nathaniel, Jr., who, by his will, left it to his sons, Hayward Peirce and Nathan. The latter, who died in 1903, in his ninetieth year, bequeathed it to his nieces and nephews, children of his brother Hayward. In the clause of his will relating to the land, he wrote:

> "I have great affection for the homestead of my father, and desire it shall remain as long as may be in the possession of the Cushing family, that the present members of the family and their descendants, may have the benefit and pleasure of a residence which has brought so much health and happiness to me."

The Dr. Cushing Otis House

JONATHAN and Joseph Turner, sons of John, Sr., were the first settlers on this land, which was a part of the eighty acres granted to Humphrey Turner in 1636. They built a house, and each lived in one half.

In 1806, Dr. Cushing Otis, a grandson of Dr. Isaac, and whose wife was a daughter of Judge Nathan Cushing, purchased the house now standing from Capt. William Brooks, who had purchased it a few months before from Thatcher Tilden. Tilden's first wife was a daughter of John Turner, but there is some doubt whether the present structure was the home of Jonathan and Joseph. Dr. Otis enlarged it by adding ten feet to the west side, making a small room at the rear for his medical supplies, and widening the parlor. The finish of the front rooms,

THE DR. CUSHING OTIS HOUSE

the wainscoting, cornice mouldings, and mantels were added at this time. A curious thing, which would perhaps determine the age of the different parts of the house, is that the finish, the familiar dog-tooth moulding, of the east side differs from that of the west.

His daughter, Miss Abigail T. Otis, was the next owner. She had a very comfortable property, which had come to her from the Cushings, Otises, and Briggs; at her death, having no nearer relatives in any of these families than second cousins, she apportioned her property among her "next of kin," after making bequests to the town of South Scituate, the Second Parish, and the James Library. The house and lands were given in equal parts to her fourteen cousins, grandchildren of James Otis, of Lyme, N. H., whose portrait, with that of his wife, hangs in the mansion now. Harriet Otis, one of these heirs, and her husband, James H. Barnard, of Savannah, Ga., bought out the other heirs, and from 1888 to 1903 the home was rented to various people, until James H. Barnard, Jr., came to live in the ancestral home in South Scituate. Recent renovations made by

Mr. Barnard uncovered ancient paneling over the mantel in the east room, concealed under laths and plaster, and showed that the once large fireplace had been twice reduced in size, building each inside the other.

NOTE: An oil portrait of Rev. Nehemiah Thomas, minister of the First Church, who had married Hannah Otis, sister of Cushing M. D., was in the house. It has been presented to the C. J. C. Chapter D. A. R. for preservation.

DR. BARNES PARSONAGE

Dr. Barnes Parsonage

DR. DAVID BARNES, pastor of the Second Church, lived in the "Old Parsonage," near Copper Corner, from 1754 to 1770, when he purchased a farm of the guardian of "Little John Turner," west of Herring Brook Hill, and began his new home that summer.

At this same time the Second Society was building its fourth meeting-house, and meanwhile the services were held in the unfinished home of the pastor.

Dr. Barnes died in 1811, and his homestead and lands were purchased by John Nash, who retained most of the farm land, but sold the house and grounds bordering on the highway, to Capt. Isaac Whittemore, who soon died at sea, and was buried on the Island of St. Helena.

His widow later married Ebenezer Thayer Fogg, of Braintree. They had a large family, and on the death of Mrs. Betsey Fogg the estate was left to her children in common, for their use, whenever they so desired. A family home, so to speak.

Various members of the family lived here from time to time, until Horace T. Fogg, a grandson, purchased the interests of the other heirs, and on his marriage took up his residence in the homestead. The house later was badly damaged by lightning, after which Mr. Fogg made extensive alterations. He has since repurchased the lands once belonging to Dr. Barnes and sold to John Nash.

The house next west, known for many years as the Hartt house, once the home of Samuel Hartt, a naval constructor, and son of Edmund Hartt, builder of the *Constitution*, was the parsonage of Rev. Samuel Deane, author of Deane's "History of Scituate." The house next east, built by Dr. Joseph L. Whittemore, was the South Parish Parsonage of the Reverends Stetson and Fuller, while the house opposite, built about 1765, by Pickles Cushing, Sr., is the present parsonage. So it may easily be seen why this portion of South Scituate's Main Street from the "Common" to Henchman's Corner, near which stood the Eell's parsonage, has been called "Parsonage Row."

The Delano Mansion

A MANSION, according to the old-time meaning of the word, was a house having more than one staircase, and this beautiful old home may well command this title, for in it are several flights of stairs. It was

The Delano Mansion

built in 1803, by William Delano, a shipbuilder, facetiously called "Lord North."

The name Delano is a French one, for the ancient town of Lannoye, a few miles from Lille, where the family lived, hence "de Lannoy." The family was of such importance in France, in 1310, that when a daughter, Mahienne de Lannoye, was married, her children took her name instead of their father's. One of her descendants, Badouin de Lannoye, was one of those who founded the "Order of the Golden Fleece," in 1429. Gilbert de Lannoye, of the fourth generation from Badouin, became a Huguenot and was disinherited by his father.

His son Jean lived in Leyden, where he married Marie le Mahiew. After his death she married, for a second husband, Jan Pesyn. This worthy couple gave

Hallway of Delano Mansion

great aid to the Plymouth Pilgrims during their stay in Leyden. (Oil portraits of them may be seen in Leyden.)

Marie's son Philip, by her first husband, born in Leyden, in 1602, was one of the passengers of the

Speedwell when she had to put back to Plymouth as unseaworthy. He came to Plymouth, however, the next year in the *Fortune*, the next vessel to arrive. On the passenger list his name is given as Philip de la Noye, aged nineteen. Three generations later his descendants came to Scituate.

William Delano, the builder of the house, had three sons and four daughters. William Hart Delano, the eldest, lived for a time in the north side of the new house, but later removed to Boston, his mother, Sarah Hart, remaining here to bring up the family.

Their circumstances at this time must have been rather straitened, for Mrs. Delano continued the store run by her husband, attached to the house, where she dispensed groceries, as well as china, silks, crêpes, and other choice goods brought her by her brother, Capt. John Hart, who was in the "China trade."

Their means became ample in later years, as the Harts were wealthy, and Mrs. Delano inherited a comfortable fortune from her family.

The sons all followed the trade of their father and grandfather, shipbuilding, and became distinguished in their line of work, but the preserving of the mansion on "Delano Hill" was left to the four daughters, all of whom died unmarried.

After their death, a widely remembered auction was held here, and most of the prized possessions of the family scattered far and wide, although some of the choicest furniture and paintings were given to Harvard University. Anyone who was lucky enough to have been on hand then, secured treasures of which they are all justly proud.

Mr. Edward F. Delano, a grandson of the first William, was the next owner, and it was he who took down the old store on the south side, as it was no longer safe.

In 1916, he sold the homestead to Mr. John H. Gutterson, the present owner and occupant.

The Samuel Hatch House

The Samuel Hatch House

THE Samuel Hatch house, which stands close by the old Stockbridge Mill, on the Country Way in Greenbush, was built in 1804 by Samuel Hatch, whose mother was Mary Jacob, on the site of the original house built by her grandfather, Dea. David Jacob, the first schoolmaster in town. "In 1710 the town agreed with Dea. David Jacob to keep a reading and writing and grammar school for the boys of the town for one year for the sum of 20 lbs., and agreed with the same to build a schoolhouse for 20 lbs." This school was located near the mill.

Deacon David was a grandson of George Russell, who purchased this property of Isaac Stedman in 1646. Jacob purchased it from his grandfather's estate in 1688.

Samuel Hatch married Eunice Jacob, and they brought up a large family in this home of goodly

THE DR. ISAAC OTIS HOUSE

Between this room and the back parlor is a dark-closet built into the chimney, which tradition says was the sleeping-place of the doctor's negro slave, in order that he might be on hand to saddle the horse and arrange the saddle-bags when his master started out to a patient.

The real purpose of this chimney closet found in many houses of this period was as a cool closet in summer and a warm one in winter. They were designated "glory-holes." Many things being stored in them as a matter of convenience, a glory-hole has come to mean a place for an accumulation of rubbish of all kinds.

In his will Doctor Isaac left the homestead to his son, Dr. James Otis, who lived here until his death, in 1807, when the property descended to his daughter Lucy, who married Thomas Barker Briggs, and whose son, Charles Briggs, in his turn became owner of the house. He was the last of the family to live here. After his death his

family removed to Essex County. Since then it has passed through several hands, but is now the home of Miss Antoinette Pray, who has done much to restore it to its former charm.

At the back is a small one-story ell which at one time was two stories high. It is thought to have been a part of the house of Joseph Nash, who was the first to have a house on this site, the land being part of the original grant to Anthony Annable in 1636.

The Jacobs Homestead

The Jacobs Homestead

ON the shores of Jacobs Pond, Assinippi, stands a large, old house built in 1726 by Joshua Jacobs. He and his brother, Dr. Joseph Jacobs, were also the builders and proprietors of the old Jacobs Mill on the Third Herring Brook, standing until July 4, 1920, when it was burned. Close by the mill was the brave old oak that was there when the Pilgrims landed in Plymouth. (Vouched for by Barry's "History of Hanover.")

"Oft in the moonlight by whose side
The dusky Indian wooed his bride."

Joshua Jacobs was an extensive landowner and a man of industry and business ability; he married Mary James,

of Scituate. Their three sons served in the Revolutionary War with distinguished ability, Col. John Jacobs, Capt. Joshua Jacobs, Corp. James Jacobs.

These three brothers married three sisters — Hannah, Elizabeth, and Deborah Richmond, of Little Compton, R. I.— of a most distinguished family.

James Jacobs, son of Ichabod Richmond Jacobs, married his cousin, Clarissa Richmond, of whom history says, "Clarissa was an excellent woman and a devoted mother." Their portraits hang in the old house, and it is from this worthy couple that the present owner of the homestead, Dr. Henry Barton Jacobs, is descended.

Dr. Ephraim Otis House

Dr. Ephraim Otis House

IN a section of the town known for generations as "Wildcat," a little southwest of White Oak Plain, stands an old house believed to be the last Quaker home now standing in the town. It was built in 1732 by Dr. Ephraim Otis, son of Job, who married Rachel Hersey, of Hingham. She was a sister of Dr. Ezekiel Hersey, whose widow married a Derby, of Salem, and founded Derby Academy, in Hingham, with money received, it is said, from her first husband, Dr. Hersey.

Their son, Dr. Ephraim Otis, graduated from Harvard College in 1756. In 1757, he was commissioned as surgeon's mate, and was at Fort William Henry in 1758. Dr. Otis was at Yale College in 1759, and in 1774 was one of the town committee to assist in preparations for war. He first settled as a physician at Taunton, later removing to Scituate, and married Sarah Harris, of Providence. Through her influence he became a convert to the Quaker faith.

On his death, in Scituate, the homestead was inherited by his son Daniel, who was a compounder of drugs and medicines at his home. In addition to his business as a druggist, he managed his 200-acre farm most successfully, and added largely to his inheritance. His wife, Mary Greene, was a Quakeress of charming personality, greatly beloved by family, acquaintances, and those who served her. At her death, an old colored servant begged to be buried at her feet when he died. The family burial lot is on the home farm, and at the foot of her grave can be found that of the faithful servant.

Ephraim Otis, oldest son of Daniel, inherited the homestead, and on his death it went into the possession of his nephew, Joseph Clapp Otis, according to provisions in his grandfather Daniel's will.

Jesse Dunbar House*

OVERLOOKING the harbor at the head of "Will James' Dock," and just north of Stephen Otis' "new house," stands a house frequently referred to in old deeds and wills as the "mansion house," and occupied for many years by Jesse Dunbar, Esq., who married Sally Witherell in 1785. For years the old stone wharf nearly opposite was known as Dunbar's wharf.

Having been enterprising in navigation and fisheries, he acquired much worldly goods, the house for many

*This house can be seen on the extreme right of picture on page 104.

years showing evidence of this. Wide paneling of doors, white marble mantel in the large reception room on the second floor, — which also boasted seven windows, — and the white and blue tile around one of the fireplaces, together with hangings and upholstering of rich, red brocade, certified to over-seas connection.

Located in the room at the left of the front door still remains the "strong box," consisting of a well-made wooden box suspended beneath the floor, and reached by removing a board across the corner.

In later years the house became known as the Dr. Francis Thomas house, he having married Sarah Dunbar, and occupied it till his death. The first transfer out of the family came when it was sold to Edward H. Bonney. The wonderful elm trees just in front have long been objects of admiration.

The Old Parsonage

The Old Parsonage

THE house known as the "Old Parsonage," of the Second Parish, stands on Main Street (Norwell) just east of Copper Corner. It was built in 1728 to

replace an older house which stood on the same site, likewise owned by the parish, and purchased by them in 1684 as a parsonage for Rev. Mr. Mighill. The Rev. Nathaniel Eells lived in the older house from 1704 to 1715, when he purchased the Henchman house.

Israel Sylvester rented the parsonage and occupied it for some years, Mr. Eells receiving the rental as part of his salary. Dr. Barnes was the next occupant, living here from 1754 to 1770. In 1784 Israel Turner purchased the house. It remained in his family for 135 years. The last of his family to occupy the home were his granddaughters, Miss Caroline Turner and her sister, Mrs. Thomas Gaffield, after whose death it was sold, in 1919, to Mr. James Stinson.

The Homestead

The Cushing Homesteads

AT the foot of Hoop Pole Hill, about a half-mile west of South Scituate Village, is Henchman's Corner, so called from Joseph Henchman, who settled there in 1680.

He built a large house a few rods east of the corner, on the north side of the "Fore Road." In 1703, the way leading from this road to Bryant's Corner was laid out, creating the corner named for Henchman.

The first Cushing to settle in this part of the town was Joseph, the youngest son of John, of Belle House Neck, who purchased in 1707 the west part of the Henchman property, and other lands towards the north. Within sight of the corner there have been three Cushing homesteads, built at different periods, but closely associated with memories of this branch of the family.

Near the road, in front of the home of Dr. Hayward W. Cushing, stood the house built by Joseph about 1709, and occupied by two generations. The corner-stone is still in place, and the seventh generation is now living on the land of the first house, near the original site. Almost on the same site stood the second house, in which lived "the four Georges" (George Sr., George Jr., George King, and his son George), burned shortly before 1897. Joseph Cushing had one child, but his son, Joseph Jr., had a family of fifteen children. The latter was for many years the Latin School master of Scituate, and prepared his own sons and many others for college. Both were deacons of the Second Church, and men greatly respected. The slate gravestones of three Josephs, grandfather, father, and son, can still be seen on the southern slope of the South Scituate burying-ground. They died within seven years, 1760 to 1767.

Judge Nathan Cushing was a son of Deacon Joseph and Lydia King. He purchased land for his home in part from the Proutys, and from John Jordan, who, Deane says, "in 1775 occupied the place where Judge Nathan Cushing's mansion stands." The site of his homestead can still be seen on the east slope of Hoop Pole Hill, near the Fore Road, marked by the clumps of lilac bushes, the ash tree, and the old well. Lilies of the valley and "daffies" still bloom each spring to keep alive the story of the Judge's garden.

It seems the irony of fate that the homestead of this distinguished man should be remembered only as the "Judge Wood place." Judge Wilkes Wood, of Middleborough, married the widow of Judge Nathan's only son, Christopher. After the Woods removed to Middleborough, the house was occupied for a time by Dr. Milton Fuller, then unoccupied for some years, and finally burned, about the middle of the last century.

Alice Cushing, his sister, married Nathaniel Cushing, of Hingham, in 1774. He was her second cousin, also descended from John Cushing, of Belle House Neck. Nathaniel Cushing bought land, in 1773, from the heirs of Philip Turner, whose broad acres extended from Henchman's on the west to Josiah Torrey's on the east, thus taking in the entire north side of South Scituate's Fore Road, from the "Eells field," east of the corner (where until the last two years stood the old "Eells pear tree"), to the stone wall between Seth Foster's and the Nash property. A homestead was probably included in the purchase, and this remained for thirty-six years the dwelling place of the family. At each half-century succeeding, changes were made in the house, and parts removed, until at the present time but little, if any, of the eighteenth-century house remains but the foundation stones.

An interesting story has been handed down in the family as related by a daughter of "Grandmother Alice." Long before her marriage to Nathaniel, he had given her a "friendship ring," which she called her "posy ring," from the flower engraved on its square top surface. One autumn day she was swinging on a gate on the home farm, and when reproved for it by an older brother, threw at him the core of the apple she was eating, and with it went her posy ring. She searched far and wide, but the precious ring could not be found. Years passed, and Alice was a grandmother. The old orchard was being ploughed one spring-like day, when the plough turned up a glittering object, quickly spied

by one of her grandsons. It proved to be a ring — but father or mother had never seen one like it. Then someone said, "Show it to grandmother." No sooner said than done. "Why, that's my posy ring," said she, "come back to me after these fifty years." Then she told them its story. She lived her ninety-six years of life, and died near the land where she was born, a less remarkable instance at that time than it would now be, in these days of frequent removals.

The picture shown represents the house as it stood in 1848, with its "primeval" oak, remembered to have stood there in 1709. About 1793, after the death of Nathaniel Cushing, Sr., the house was deeded to his son Nathaniel, Jr., who, by his will, left it to his sons, Hayward Peirce and Nathan. The latter, who died in 1903, in his ninetieth year, bequeathed it to his nieces and nephews, children of his brother Hayward. In the clause of his will relating to the land, he wrote:

"I have great affection for the homestead of my father, and desire it shall remain as long as may be in the possession of the Cushing family, that the present members of the family and their descendants, may have the benefit and pleasure of a residence which has brought so much health and happiness to me."

The Dr. Cushing Otis House

JONATHAN and Joseph Turner, sons of John, Sr., were the first settlers on this land, which was a part of the eighty acres granted to Humphrey Turner in 1636. They built a house, and each lived in one half.

In 1806, Dr. Cushing Otis, a grandson of Dr. Isaac, and whose wife was a daughter of Judge Nathan Cushing, purchased the house now standing from Capt. William Brooks, who had purchased it a few months before from Thatcher Tilden. Tilden's first wife was a daughter of John Turner, but there is some doubt whether the present structure was the home of Jonathan and Joseph. Dr. Otis enlarged it by adding ten feet to the west side, making a small room at the rear for his medical supplies, and widening the parlor. The finish of the front rooms,

THE DR. CUSHING OTIS HOUSE

the wainscoting, cornice mouldings, and mantels were added at this time. A curious thing, which would perhaps determine the age of the different parts of the house, is that the finish, the familiar dog-tooth moulding, of the east side differs from that of the west.

His daughter, Miss Abigail T. Otis, was the next owner. She had a very comfortable property, which had come to her from the Cushings, Otises, and Briggs; at her death, having no nearer relatives in any of these families than second cousins, she apportioned her property among her "next of kin," after making bequests to the town of South Scituate, the Second Parish, and the James Library. The house and lands were given in equal parts to her fourteen cousins, grandchildren of James Otis, of Lyme, N. H., whose portrait, with that of his wife, hangs in the mansion now. Harriet Otis, one of these heirs, and her husband, James H. Barnard, of Savannah, Ga., bought out the other heirs, and from 1888 to 1903 the home was rented to various people, until James H. Barnard, Jr., came to live in the ancestral home in South Scituate. Recent renovations made by

Mr. Barnard uncovered ancient paneling over the mantel in the east room, concealed under laths and plaster, and showed that the once large fireplace had been twice reduced in size, building each inside the other.

NOTE: An oil portrait of Rev. Nehemiah Thomas, minister of the First Church, who had married Hannah Otis, sister of Cushing M. D., was in the house. It has been presented to the C. J. C. Chapter D. A. R. for preservation.

DR. BARNES PARSONAGE

Dr. Barnes Parsonage

DR. DAVID BARNES, pastor of the Second Church, lived in the "Old Parsonage," near Copper Corner, from 1754 to 1770, when he purchased a farm of the guardian of "Little John Turner," west of Herring Brook Hill, and began his new home that summer.

At this same time the Second Society was building its fourth meeting-house, and meanwhile the services were held in the unfinished home of the pastor.

Dr. Barnes died in 1811, and his homestead and lands were purchased by John Nash, who retained most of the farm land, but sold the house and grounds bordering on the highway, to Capt. Isaac Whittemore, who soon died at sea, and was buried on the Island of St. Helena.

His widow later married Ebenezer Thayer Fogg, of Braintree. They had a large family, and on the death of Mrs. Betsey Fogg the estate was left to her children in common, for their use, whenever they so desired. A family home, so to speak.

Various members of the family lived here from time to time, until Horace T. Fogg, a grandson, purchased the interests of the other heirs, and on his marriage took up his residence in the homestead. The house later was badly damaged by lightning, after which Mr. Fogg made extensive alterations. He has since repurchased the lands once belonging to Dr. Barnes and sold to John Nash.

The house next west, known for many years as the Hartt house, once the home of Samuel Hartt, a naval constructor, and son of Edmund Hartt, builder of the *Constitution*, was the parsonage of Rev. Samuel Deane, author of Deane's "History of Scituate." The house next east, built by Dr. Joseph L. Whittemore, was the South Parish Parsonage of the Reverends Stetson and Fuller, while the house opposite, built about 1765, by Pickles Cushing, Sr., is the present parsonage. So it may easily be seen why this portion of South Scituate's Main Street from the "Common" to Henchman's Corner, near which stood the Eell's parsonage, has been called "Parsonage Row."

The Delano Mansion

A MANSION, according to the old-time meaning of the word, was a house having more than one staircase, and this beautiful old home may well command this title, for in it are several flights of stairs. It was

The Delano Mansion

built in 1803, by William Delano, a shipbuilder, facetiously called "Lord North."

The name Delano is a French one, for the ancient town of Lannoye, a few miles from Lille, where the family lived, hence "de Lannoy." The family was of such importance in France, in 1310, that when a daughter, Mahienne de Lannoye, was married, her children took her name instead of their father's. One of her descendants, Badouin de Lannoye, was one of those who founded the "Order of the Golden Fleece," in 1429. Gilbert de Lannoye, of the fourth generation from Badouin, became a Huguenot and was disinherited by his father.

His son Jean lived in Leyden, where he married Marie le Mahiew. After his death she married, for a second husband, Jan Pesyn. This worthy couple gave

Hallway of Delano Mansion

great aid to the Plymouth Pilgrims during their stay in Leyden. (Oil portraits of them may be seen in Leyden.)

Marie's son Philip, by her first husband, born in Leyden, in 1602, was one of the passengers of the

Speedwell when she had to put back to Plymouth as unseaworthy. He came to Plymouth, however, the next year in the *Fortune*, the next vessel to arrive. On the passenger list his name is given as Philip de la Noye, aged nineteen. Three generations later his descendants came to Scituate.

William Delano, the builder of the house, had three sons and four daughters. William Hart Delano, the eldest, lived for a time in the north side of the new house, but later removed to Boston, his mother, Sarah Hart, remaining here to bring up the family.

Their circumstances at this time must have been rather straitened, for Mrs. Delano continued the store run by her husband, attached to the house, where she dispensed groceries, as well as china, silks, crêpes, and other choice goods brought her by her brother, Capt. John Hart, who was in the "China trade."

Their means became ample in later years, as the Harts were wealthy, and Mrs. Delano inherited a comfortable fortune from her family.

The sons all followed the trade of their father and grandfather, shipbuilding, and became distinguished in their line of work, but the preserving of the mansion on "Delano Hill" was left to the four daughters, all of whom died unmarried.

After their death, a widely remembered auction was held here, and most of the prized possessions of the family scattered far and wide, although some of the choicest furniture and paintings were given to Harvard University. Anyone who was lucky enough to have been on hand then, secured treasures of which they are all justly proud.

Mr. Edward F. Delano, a grandson of the first William, was the next owner, and it was he who took down the old store on the south side, as it was no longer safe.

In 1916, he sold the homestead to Mr. John H. Gutterson, the present owner and occupant.

The Samuel Hatch House

The Samuel Hatch House

THE Samuel Hatch house, which stands close by the old Stockbridge Mill, on the Country Way in Greenbush, was built in 1804 by Samuel Hatch, whose mother was Mary Jacob, on the site of the original house built by her grandfather, Dea. David Jacob, the first schoolmaster in town. "In 1710 the town agreed with Dea. David Jacob to keep a reading and writing and grammar school for the boys of the town for one year for the sum of 20 lbs., and agreed with the same to build a schoolhouse for 20 lbs." This school was located near the mill.

Deacon David was a grandson of George Russell, who purchased this property of Isaac Stedman in 1646. Jacob purchased it from his grandfather's estate in 1688.

Samuel Hatch married Eunice Jacob, and they brought up a large family in this home of goodly

recorded number built at any yard on the river in one year. In 1818, two vessels were launched in one day, the ship *Pacific* and the *Peruvian*. Ash, from Pembroke, and pine and oak, were used in their construction, and Samuel Curtis was paid $1.14 for twelve gallons of cider for the launching of both ships. The *Pacific* was lost at Kodiac, near Alaska, in 1866, and the *Peruvian* was whaling in the Pacific until 1857, when she was broken up at New Bedford. In 1823, the North River and Boston packet sloop *Albion* was built at this yard by Samuel and Seth Foster & Co. In 1825, the Fosters built the *Smyrna*, which became famous ever after 1830, when she carried the Stars and Stripes into the Black Sea for the first time. In 1831, Turner Foster and Joseph Clapp formed a partnership and built on the part known as the "Old Curtis Yard."

After the Fosters left the Wanton Yard, it was next occupied by Cummings Litchfield and James S. Burrill. They built the last ship at this yard, which was in the year 1840, the *Franklin*, of 172 tons, sold to Provincetown.

Next below the Wanton Yard, on the South Scituate side of the river, we come to the Chittenden Yard, located at the first rise of land just above and near the mouth of the Second Herring Brook. Job Randall was the first to build ships here, about 1690. The last vessel of which we have record as having been built here by Randall was the brigantine *Adventure*, of 60 tons, in 1705, for Andrew Belcher, Samuel Lillie, and David Bucklyn, of Boston. Randall was succeeded by Edward or Isaac Prouty, and these builders, in turn, were succeeded by the Chittendens, who built here, as early as 1709, the sloop *Seaflower*, of 30 tons.

Obadiah and Noah Merritt built vessels there as late as 1785, when they built the schooner *Lively*, of 56 tons, and in 1795 Samuel Sylvester built the schooner *Mary and Nancy*, of 41 tons, here. He also built at Cohasset as late as 1806. George Torrey was building at this yard

as early as 1794 the schooner, afterward the brig, *Betsey*, of 111 tons, and as late as 1799 he built the schooner *Lydia*, of 81 tons.

James Torrey also built here, and later, George, Jr., and David Torrey. In 1800, Joseph Nash built the sloop *Packet*, of 37 tons, at this yard. In 1812, George Torrey & Sons built their last vessel, the schooner *New Sally*, of 56 tons, and then removed to the Block-House Yard. They were succeeded at the Chittenden Yard by Laban Souther, who later formed a partnership with Elijah Cudworth, which was terminated by the death of Mr. Souther, in 1840. Mr. Cudworth then took his four sons into the firm. They procured their timber from the vicinity at first, the forests still yielding plentifully white and black oak and other timber suitable for shipbuilding. Later, timber was procured from the forests of Bridgewater and Abington at a much greater cost. About 1859, timber being scarce, the firm dissolved. They had not built many vessels after 1850, and as early as 1851 Henry Merritt built at this yard the schooner *Sarah Jane*, 67 tons, for New York parties. The last ship built in the Chittenden Yard was the schooner *Helen M. Foster*, of 90 tons, draught 10 feet, built by Joseph Merritt, of oak, iron and copper fastened. This was the last launching from the banks of North River from 1871 to the present time.

The next yard below the Chittenden was the Block-House Yard, on the bend of the river, near the spot where the block house, or garrison, attacked by the Indians during King Philip's War, was located. The Block-House Yard was first occupied by the Jameses and the Tildens early in 1700. The James family built here as late as 1795, when William James built the ship *Mary*, and in the certificate he swore that she was "full built," that "she had 2 decks and 3 masts . . . burthen 286 tons." Daniel Hatch is said to have built the schooner *Saucy Jack*, of 90 tons, here in 1802. William James became a partner of Jotham Tilden, with whom he built

Last Launching on North River

vessels. James Torrey built here in 1806 the schooner *Phoebe*, 117 tons. George and David Torrey next built here. In 1816, they built the *Mary and Polly*, of 77 tons, followed by many other vessels, and William James, Jr., and David Torrey began building vessels here about 1825, when they built the brig *Le Vante*, followed by many other vessels, including the schooner *Columbia*, in which Rev. William P. Tilden, when quite young, went on a fishing cruise. Tradition says the last vessels built here were the brig *Abraham* and the ship *Enterprise*, built by the Torreys in 1847–48.

We next come to the Briggs Yard at Hobart's Landing. This yard was in Scituate, a short distance up the river from Little's Bridge. Thomas Nichols, a shipwright, built vessels here in 1645; he was succeeded by his son-in-law, Samuel House, Jr., and he in turn was succeeded by Jeremiah and Walter Hatch. Israel Hobart came to Scituate in 1676 from Hingham, where his house had been burned that spring by the Indians. He carried on shipbuilding at Hobart's Landing, and his house stood near the shipyard. It was a spacious mansion adorned

with cherubs over the door, carved from wood. Here he built the *Swallow*, the *Desire*, and many other ships. In 1750, James Briggs began building at this yard; he was in the French War and belonged to the New England troops led by Col. John Winslow when they took Louisburgh in 1744. In 1775, he was in charge of a watch box on Third Cliff. In 1776, he was called upon to volunteer in the Continental Army. He had no gun, but drilled with a stick of wood. When asked what he was going to do with the stick, he replied, "I am going to knock down the first British soldier I see and take his gun." When discharged from the service, he came home with a British musket. Prior to this, however, he built a ship that became famous the world over. This was the ship *Columbia*, which he built at Hobart's Landing in 1773. She was the first ship to carry the American flag around the world, and the first ship to visit the Northwest Coast, where the Columbia River was named for her.

The publication, in 1784, of Capt. Cook's journal of his third voyage awakened a widespread interest in the possibility of an important trade on the Northwest Coast. In Boston, there were a few gentlemen who took up the matter seriously and determined to embark on the enterprise on their own account. The leading spirit among them was James Barrell, a merchant of distinction, whose financial ability, cultivated tastes, and wide acquaintance with affairs gave him a position of acknowledged influence in business and social circles.

Associated with him in close companionship was Charles Bulfinch, a recent graduate from Harvard, who had just returned from pursuing special studies in Europe. His father, Dr. Thomas Bulfinch, lived on Bowdoin Square, and often entertained at his house the friends who were inclined to favor the project. They read together Cook's report on an abundant supply of valuable furs offered by the natives in exchange for beads and other trifles. Accordingly, in the year 1787, they made all necessary arrangements for putting out an expedition.

The other partners were Samuel Brown, a prosperous merchant; John Derby, a shipmaster of Salem; Capt. Crowell Hatch, a resident of Cambridge; and John Marden Pintard, of the well-known firm of Lewis Pintard & Co., of New York.

These six gentlemen subscribed over fifty thousand dollars, dividing the stock into fourteen shares, and purchased the ship *Columbia*, or, as she was often called, the *Columbia Rediviva*. This was the ship built in 1773 by James Briggs at Hobart's Landing, on the once busy little river. She was a full-rigged ship, 83 feet long, and measured 212 tons. She had two decks, a figurehead, and a square stern, and was mounted with ten guns. While cruising on the Northwest Coast, Capt. Gray, the commander, espied the entrance which Vancouver had passed a few days before, considering it a small river not worthy of his attention, and continuing on his course. Capt. Gray felt differently, and the wind being favorable, he bore away and ran in under full sail through the breakers. He at once saw that his surmises were correct. Here was a magnificent stream of clear water, four or five miles wide, up which he sailed ten miles and then came to anchor in ten fathoms.

On the 14th of May, 1792, the ship *Columbia* stood up the river some fifteen miles farther, and being convinced that it was navigable for an indefinite distance, Capt. Gray decided to return. On the 19th, he landed with his crew near the mouth of the river and formally named it after his ship, the *Columbia*, raising the flag and planting some coins under a pine tree near the headland, which he named "Cape Hancock," and the low spit on the opposite shore he named "Point Adams."

There was ample proof that Capt. Gray, in the *Columbia*, was the first white man to cross the bar and anchor on those waters. He made the first chart and raised the first flag that ever floated over them, and the name he gave the river has been universally accepted.

Tradition says the *Washington*, her consort, was built at North River; this, with the *Columbia*, was the first American vessel to double the stormy Cape Horn.

An old ship carpenter, Capt. Benjamin White, living in Marshfield in 1889, in his ninety-first year, is authority for the fact that James Briggs built "the largest vessel ever built on the North River prior to 1800." This was the ship *Massachusetts*, of about 400 tons, built in 1780. The last ship we have record of having been built here was the *New Bedford*, of 253 tons, built in 1793, and sold to Portsmouth, N. H. James Briggs was succeeded at the shipyard by his son, Thomas Barker Briggs, who built the schooner *Three Friends*, of 98 tons, in 1797, the *Iris*, the *Lucy*, the *Cushing*, and, in 1803, the schooner *Priscilla*, 60 tons, of Chatham, which was captured by the British in 1813. Thomas Barker Briggs enlisted on a privateer during the War of 1812, was taken prisoner on the 12th of May, 1813, and was later confined in Dartmoor Prison, England, from which he was not discharged until the end of the war. He was succeeded at the yard by Henry and Cushing Otis Briggs. Henry had learned the art of shipbuilding at the Wanton Yard, while Cushing Otis Briggs served his time at the Brick Kiln Yard in Pembroke, under Ichabod Thomas, whose daughter Mercy he afterwards married; they resided at the old homestead of James Briggs, then occupied by Lucy and Sally, daughters of James Briggs. This house was built by Robert Thomson, mason, about 1712. Among the many ships built by them at this yard was the brig *Kronstadt*, copper and iron fastened, 273 tons register, length 100 feet, breadth 24 feet, depth 12 feet, with two decks and two masts and a full model, for Nathaniel Emmons, Thomas B. Wales, Samuel Quincy, and Moses Wheeler, of Boston. Henry and Cushing Otis Briggs were succeeded by Charles C. and William T. Briggs, who also built, in connection with their father, under the firm name of Cushing O. Briggs & Sons. One of the last vessels built at the yard was by Cushing

O. Briggs & Sons, in 1841, the bark *Susan Jane*, 274 tons, for Edward and Henry W. Fletcher, of Boston. She was used in the Mediterranean trade, and in 1874 was sailing under the British flag from St. John, New Brunswick, Capt. Hecksford, Master.

From 1650 to 1864, there were a great many ships built in Scituate Harbor. William James, tradition says, was the first to build ships here, possibly as early as 1650. He was succeeded by Job Otis, who, records say, " built the katch *Little Otis* of Scituate, whereof Samuel Otis is at present master, built at Scituate aforesaid, being a round stern vessel of a burthen of about 30 tons, in the present year seventeen hundred." The brig *Unity* was built in 1708, also the katch *Sarah's Adventure*, and many other vessels.

John Kent built here as early as 1700, and his descendant, Samuel, built ships at the same yard one hundred years later. William Vinal built vessels in Scituate Harbor in 1786, and was succeeded by his son William. Samuel Kent built more vessels than any other ship carpenter at the Harbor during the first part of the nineteenth century; his yard was located near the mouth of Satuit Brook.

Samuel's father, David Kent, was a shipwright from Scituate, and later lived near Clark & Hart's shipbuilding yards, adjacent to the North Battery in Boston, and probably built ships there.

In 1798, Samuel Kent built the schooner *Eliza* at Scituate Harbor. This was followed by the building of many other vessels by him, some of which were sold to Boston, others to Plymouth parties, and at least one, the *Nancy*, of 94 tons, was used as the North River packet.

In 1813, Anthony Waterman built at the Kent Yard the schooner *Old Carpenter* and the schooner *Jolly Tar*.

The last vessel we find built by Samuel Kent at his yard was the brig *Oracle*, of 144 tons, in 1818. Beginning about 1834, James S. and B. W. Briggs built at the Kent Yard, though later they removed to the Will James Yard,

back of the old Dunbar store, which had been owned previously by Abijah Otis. In 1841, James O. Curtis built the bark *J. W. Paige*, of 198 tons. He later removed to Medford. The same year William Vinal built the schooner *Sarah*, 63 tons, at the Melzar Turner Yard. This was used as a packet between Scituate and Boston until she was sold for the southern trade.

As late as 1849, the Briggs brothers built the brig *Martha Allen*, 283 tons, which in 1859 was sailing under the German flag. The last vessel built by Sylvester and Barnabas Briggs was the brig *Eveline*, 650 tons, for Capt. Joseph Smith, of Cohasset, in 1859.

About 1837, Melzar Turner left the shipyards at Pembroke, where he was building with Luther Briggs, and occupied a yard opposite the residence of Capt. Henry Vinal. He built many vessels here, mainly for Boston parties. About 1845, Luther Briggs joined him at the Harbor, and together they built the brig *Samuel Soper* and the schooner *Spartacus* and other vessels, the last of which we have record being the bark *Almatia*, 475 tons, built in 1856. At different times Edwin Otis and Andrew Cole were in partnership with Briggs and Turner, and this combined firm built, at the Harbor, the schooner *Meteor*, 116 tons, in 1864.

Shipbuilding, once the largest and most important business ever carried on within the limits of Scituate, has gone; but the romance still remains, and will always be remembered, at least by some, who have, tucked away in their attics, curios and trinkets brought home from foreign lands in world famous "North River built vessels."

Navigation

SCITUATE being a coast town, it follows that many of her citizens have been interested in a coasting trade, and one with the West Indies and foreign countries. Their sons studied navigation, and have commanded many locally built vessels. To even mention the names of the many who have been captains of fishermen and coasters, would be next to impossible — their name is legion. Most of them were owners, or part owners, of the vessels they commanded. From the earliest days, this trade had been a lucrative one, and ownership of a vessel, or shares in one, proved an attractive and popular investment for the well-to-do citizens.

During the last century, there were many Scituate men who commanded noted vessels, and are remembered for long service, or for interesting adventures or experiences. Among them we note the Manson family, which for four generations have commanded vessels, many of them built at North River, or the Harbor yards. The first Capt. John Manson came to Scituate in 1755, and he and his son, Capt. Nehemiah, were soldiers in the Revolution. Capt. Nehemiah lived on the site of the Allen Memorial Library, and had eight sons, one of whom was drowned when very young off the wharf at Scituate, and a second while on a fishing voyage. The remaining six, Thomas, Nehemiah, John, Joel Lincoln, George, and William, became masters of vessels, sailing to many ports in all parts of the globe. Capt. Joel Lincoln was the owner and captain of the barque *Martha Allen*, built at Scituate Harbor in 1849. Capt. John made his first voyage with his father when he was ten years old, in the *Rosebud*, one of the vessels carried off, but afterward returned, by the British ship *La Hogue*, in the War of 1812. Capt. Manson spent his whole life on the ocean. He gradually rose in rank until he

commanded the *Meridian*, then the largest ship afloat, and afterwards the *Golden Fleece*, one of the finest and largest sailing from Boston. He made hundreds of voyages, and sailed for many years for the firm of W. F. Weld & Co., of Boston, and on one voyage made for them $60,000.

His brother, Capt. William, began life on the fishing boats at nine years, was later in the West India trade, and eventually commanded vessels in the Mediterranean fruit trade, the well-known *Stamboul* and *Rebecca Goddard*. His last service was in the California trade, when he was master of the clipper ships *Nightingale*, *Dexter*, and *Pharos*.

Two sons of Capt. John Manson — Captains John Lincoln and Edmund Sewall — have also been masters of clipper ships. Capt. John L. at twenty-four commanded the *Golden Fleece*, bound for San Francisco, and later the *Mariposa*, the first full-rigged iron ship to sail under the American flag. He doubled Cape Horn thirty-six times. His brother, Capt. Edmund Sewall, went to sea at an early age, and rose rapidly to the command of ships in the California, China, and African trade. Among his ships were the *Valparaiso*, *Edith*, *Mariposa*, and *Magellan*.

Capt. Ichabod Cook learned navigation from his brothers John and Samuel, and all three were masters of vessels before they were twenty-five. His foreign voyages were made as first officer with Capt. James Damon, of Scituate. In March, 1852, Capt. Cook sailed from Scituate in the schooner *Sarah Brooks* — built and owned in Scituate — bound for a southern port. His crew were all related, and it is supposed that the vessel was lost the first night out, as it was never heard from.

Capt. Henry Vinal, a descendant of the enterprising widow, Ann Vinal, who came with her three children from England to Scituate, in 1636, sailed to foreign ports in the bark *J. A. Jesuroon*, built in Scituate, and of which he was part owner.

Capt. Moses Rich Colman was in the coasting trade for forty years, and afterward the California trade in the *Asa Eldridge*, doubling Cape Horn in her ten times. His last voyage lasted forty-three months because of the Civil War. During that time he went around the world twice, stopping at the East Indies and London.

In Union Cemetery, at Scituate, is a stone which reads, "Capt. Ezekiel Jones. The last Scituate Veteran of the War of 1812. Raised from the ranks in the Navy to a Captaincy in the U. S. Revenue Marine."

Capt. Jones was best known as "Commodore Jones," so styled by his friends and neighbors. In the War of 1812, twelve men from Scituate volunteered for the United States Navy. One of these was Ezekiel Jones, who served continuously, and was engaged with the enemy four times, once off the coast of Africa, where he was severely wounded and taken prisoner. In 1821, the President of the United States commissioned him as first lieutenant in the U. S. Revenue Marine. This promotion was a reward for his gallantry in suppressing one of the bloodiest mutinies that ever took place on the high seas, on board the ship *Oglethorpe*, on which Capt. Jones was the chief officer. He was in the United States service over forty years, during which time he was a captain in the Revenue Service thirty years. During the Florida War, he was commander of the U. S. Cutter *Ingham*, which cruised along the coast of Mexico for the suppression of the slave trade. There he met the Mexican ship *Montezuma*, and rescued a large number of Americans, who had been captured from the American schooner *Martha*, and held as prisoners.

Capt. Isaac Whittemore came to Scituate and married Betsey Tower in 1811. He was master of the ship *Caroline*, died in 1819, and was buried on the island of St. Helena. The log-book of the *Caroline*, owned by Horace T. Fogg, contains much interesting information of voyages to the northwest coast, to Honolulu, and other Pacific ports, in the early part of the last century.

The "Old Sloop"

Church History

First Parish Church

THE settlement of Scituate was begun before 1628 by the "Men of Kent," from England, who were of Puritan stock, possessing the sturdy virtues of the early Saxons. Many of the best came to "the wilderness called Scituate" to escape the persecution to which they were subjected in England.

They were followers of the Rev. John Robinson, worshiped in a meeting-house made of logs, thatched with grass from the neighboring marshes, and located on the brow of a hill overlooking the ocean. Around it were clustered the first graves in what is now a carefully preserved burial-ground, called Meeting-house Lane Cemetery, where the oldest gravestone, that of Mr. John Williams, is dated 1694.

The first minister, Mr. Giles Saxton, came in 1631 and left in 1634, the date of organization of the church. Very little is known of him, but tradition says there was contention over a point of doctrine.

Mr. John Lothrop was the first minister after the organization of the church, and a very learned man. Arriving with a company of thirty of his congregation from England, September 27, 1634, he found a considerable settlement, and he was received as an old friend. In 1639, on account of a disagreement between him and his flock on the subject of baptism, he removed to Barnstable, taking with him twenty-two male church members and their families, and establishing there a flourishing church in the West Parish. He kept a valuable diary of events connected with both churches, which has been published in an early number of the *N. E. Genealogical and Historical Register*. He died November 8, 1653.

The church in Scituate was generously upheld by the devotion and enthusiasm of Timothy Hatherly, who contributed liberally to its support during his lifetime, and by bequests after his death. As early as 1654 he presented to the church "a parsonage and lands," which was probably the house afterwards improved and known as the "Old Parsonage," built in 1643, on the hill north of Union Hall. It was occupied by the ministers of the First Church until the time of the Rev. Nehemiah Thomas, and was taken down in 1897. Hatherly also gave the church his house and lands at Farm Neck, later known as the Turner farm.

On the ministers' monument in the ancient churchyard of the First Church, in Meeting-house Lane, are the names of the ministers, beginning with Giles Saxton, and ending with Edmund Quincy Sewall, 1848; while on a bronze tablet erected by Chief Justice Cushing Chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution, is an inscription taken from the diary of Rev. John Lothrop:

FIRST MEETING HOUSE
ERECTED ON THIS LOTT
AUG. YE 2ND & 3RD DAYES 1636
EXERCISED IN NOVEMB. 10 & 11, 1636.

THIS TABLET WAS PLACED BY THE
CHIEF JUSTICE CUSHING CHAPTER D. A. R.
OF SCITUATE, 1912.

The early ministers were designated by plain Mr., which was then a title of great honor. Mr. Charles Chauncey, of Plymouth, was called to the church in 1641, though only by a small majority, and Scituate began under him a thirty-three years' controversy on the subject of baptism. It is said that nearly one-half of the church members remonstrated on account of his ideas on baptism. He believed in immersion for all, even for infants. Many of these protesting members were resolute in not submitting to these forms, and by the advice of the Ruling Elders in the colony finally withdrew, and organized the Second Church of Christ in Scituate, February 2, 1642, calling it the "Upper Parish."

Mr. Chauncey was of a zealous, arbitrary temperament, and the trouble in the church was not allayed. He left the church in 1654 with the intention of going to England, but while in Boston was asked to accept the presidency of Harvard College, which position he retained until his death, in 1672, aged eighty-two.

Rev. Henry Dunster came from England in 1640, and was the first president of Harvard College, which position he resigned in 1654, and came to Scituate as pastor of the

First Church. He died in 1659, in Scituate, and was buried in Cambridge.

Thus the first two presidents of Harvard College were ministers of the First Church of Christ in Scituate.

The second meeting-house was erected on the same location as the first in 1682, and the third also on the same spot in 1708, at a cost of "not more than £300." Following Rev. Jeremiah Cushing, installed in 1691 at a salary of £60, came in 1707 Rev. Nathaniel Pitcher. Tradition speaks of him as a gentleman of very agreeable person and manners, a preacher of more than ordinary ability, and remarkable for promoting peace and union among his people. His relations with the other church were very friendly and cordial. It was during his ministry that the third meeting-house was built on the old site, after long controversy.

In 1724, Rev. Shearjashub Bourne was called. During his long ministry of thirty-seven years a new meeting-house was built, in 1737, on a new site called "the gore of land," a short distance east of the hill where the present Unitarian meeting-house stands; the people at the west part having grown numerous enough to gain this long-talked-of result. Mr. Bourne's health failed in 1761, and he resigned.

A record book was carefully kept by him during his ministry, of the baptisms, marriages, and deaths, covering upwards of forty years. This book, begun in 1707 in the beautiful handwriting of Rev. Nathaniel Pitcher, contains many valuable records not found in the other town books, and is now in the custody of the First Church.

The fifth meeting-house was erected during the pastorate of Rev. Ebenezer Grosvenor (1763-80), in 1774, on the top of the hill, a "double decker," so called, wide galleries on three sides, and two rows of large windows with a very high and well-proportioned steeple at the west end, and a portico at the east end. This church was discernible for a long distance at sea, and was gladly hailed by home-bound mariners as the first sight of land.

They called it the "Old Sloop." Town meetings were held here, as they had been in all the churches from the earliest times. This was the North Meeting-house, and the Second Society's was the South Meeting-house; the town meetings were called alternately in each. In the time of the Revolutionary War the soldiers were camped in the meeting-houses and were drilled on the common near by. In 1775, the parish voted to carry firearms to church to repel the British troops which might pass through the town.

For the next seven years the church was without a pastor, but in 1787 settled Rev. Ebenezer Dawes, who died at Scituate in 1791.

Rev. Nehemiah Thomas, of Marshfield, Harvard College, 1789, was ordained to the ministry at Scituate Church, November 14, 1792, and preached there till his death, in 1831, thirty-nine years. At this time the controversy arose which caused the division of the church into two societies, the Unitarian and the Trinitarian. He belonged to the liberal wing of the church, called Unitarian, as distinguished from the Trinitarian. This wave of dissension swept over the other Puritan churches at this time and many other old First churches were divided by it. Discussion ran high and appeals were made to the courts by the seceders in many cases, but the decree of the court was that the records, plate, and property, should still remain with the First churches — though the seceders were welcome to retain the doctrines if they wished. Mr. Thomas was an able and friendly man, and sustained himself during this acrimonious time and under these peculiar difficulties in a manner reflecting great credit to himself and the church members under his charge. The separation took place in 1825.

Mr. Thomas' home was the colonial house on Brushy Hill, at Greenbush, later owned by Frederic T. Cole. During his thirty-nine years of ministry he baptized four hundred persons, children and adults; admitted one hundred twenty-four to membership in the church;

married three hundred eighty-two couples; and attended about sixteen funerals each year.

The meeting-house was first heated by stoves in 1824; the first bell was bought in 1811; and a new hymn-book introduced in place of the old Sternhold & Hopkins book first used. When the church was remodeled, in 1825, the portico at the east end was removed and sold to Asa Merritt, who placed it on his own land and made it into a house. Up to this time, about two hundred years from the first settlement of the town, there had been five church buildings replacing each other, only one, the last, being a frame building; and eleven ministers giving long terms of service to each. Five of these ministers were graduates of Harvard College, one of Yale College, and one of Oxford and one of Cambridge, England.

In 1838, the church again needed repairs, or a new house built, and a committee was chosen, reporting, in 1839, that the cost of a new church like Mr. May's, at South Scituate, would be about $4,000, but the present meeting-house could be repaired for $1,700, including a new pulpit and pews. It was at this time that the sounding-board was taken down, though the red damask draperies back of the pulpit were retained. There were sixty-eight pews on the floor and twelve in the galleries, seating four hundred people.

Rev. Edmund Quincy Sewall succeeded to the pastorate in 1831, and continued till 1848. He came of an educated and distinguished ancestry. He was a lineal descendant of the learned Judge Samuel Sewall, of Boston, as well as of the Quincys of Quincy. His home in Scituate was on Kent Street, in the house afterwards owned by Charles Vinal. When chosen minister the salary offered was $700. After 1831 the state legislature abolished the law which provided for the support of churches by taxation, and the system of a voluntary tax on pews was tried.

After 1848 there was a series of short pastorates lasting until 1877, when Rev. Allan Gay Jennings, of the South

Hingham church, occupied also the pulpit of this church.

It was on July 4, 1879, that the "Old Sloop" at Scituate was burned, through the carelessness of boys with firecrackers, who played there in the early morning. About noon, smoke was seen coming from the porch, but the fire had such headway that it was impossible to do more than save a few of the furnishings. The bell was tolled as long as possible, and anxious and stricken friends, far and near, watched the progress of the flames, and many tears were shed as the lofty spire, 100 feet high, trembled and fell, with a last tolling of the big bell, which was afterwards found a mass of melted metal in the ruins.

The "Old Sloop" was a great loss to the parish, for the insurance of $3,000 which had been placed on it had expired. The people rallied around the ruins, and with Mr. Jennings for a helper and adviser, were soon started in rebuilding on the same spot. Sons and daughters of the old church responded generously to the call for help, many of whom were living in far-off lands. At a church meeting held July 16, 1879, it was voted to rebuild. Contributions were solicited; the corner-stone was laid May 10, 1880, and the church was dedicated May 18, 1881.

Since that time several ministers, each serving for a short period, have filled the pulpit, prominent among whom was the Rev. Nathaniel Seaver, who served as pastor for five years, during a time of parish harmony and prosperity.

During the pastorates of later years, the meeting-house on the hill has continued to send forth its message of

"The Fatherhood of God,
The Brotherhood of Man,
The Leadership of Jesus,
Salvation by Character;
The Progress of Mankind
onward and upward forever."

The Second Parish Church

The Second Church of Christ in Scituate, now the First Parish Church of Norwell

THE same diversity of opinion regarding baptism that from the beginning had made the Scituate church inharmonious was responsible for the formation of the "Second Church up the North River." There remained in the church at Scituate two of the most influential, educated, and strong-minded men of their period, Timothy Hatherly and William Vassall. When the majority of the members of the First Church, with Mr. Hatherly as their leader, extended the call to Mr. Chauncey, the unfortunate controversy seemed likely to remain settled for a period; but, unfortunately, the temperament of their new pastor was not calculated to unite the differing parties. Nevertheless, without Mr. Vassall as a leader of the minority, Mr. Hatherly's influence, with that of Mr. Chauncey's other friends,

would have been strong enough to have delayed the formation of the Second Church for some years, or until the settlers who had followed Cornet Stetson up the river were numerous enough to demand church privileges nearer home.

The first covenant of the Second Church was signed February 2, 1642, probably at the home of William Vassall, at Belle House Neck. The ordination of their first pastor was on September 2, 1645, when Mr. William Wetherell was installed by the laying on of the hands of the Ruling Elders of the new church, in accordance with the principles of Congregationalism. The first meeting-house stood "fifty rods east of Stony Cove Brook," on the crest of Wilson's Hill, and was used by the society during the thirty-nine years of Mr. Wetherell's ministry. His parsonage stood "a few rods southeast of the church," and was either built or purchased by him, as it was never owned by the society.

Belonging to the liberal party, as did the members of his church who had called him, his services were widely sought to administer the rite of baptism, especially for infants. Six hundred and eight baptisms were recorded during his ministry.

In 1680, the year that Mr. Mighill came as assistant to Mr. Wetherell, the second meeting-house of the society was built on Timothy Foster's land, in the old church-yard and burying-ground a few rods east of the Union Bridge road. An effort was made at this time to unite the two societies and build a meeting-house near the Stockbridge pond, at Greenbush, but the project failed, for the southern section "up the river" was being rapidly settled. The new location was a half mile above the old one, and very conveniently situated.

No provision was made by the society for a parsonage for Mr. Mighill until 1684, when a house was either purchased or built for his accommodation on the location of the house of the late Mrs. Maria Gaffield. (See "Eighteenth Century Houses.")

Mr. Mighill died in 1689, and for several months in 1690-91, Mr. John Cotton, of Plymouth, preached to the society. He was the son of Rev. John Cotton of the Plymouth church, and grandson of the famous John Cotton of the First Church of Boston.

Mr. Deodate Lawson was ordained in 1694. In 1698, the society complained to the elders of the neighboring churches "of his long and continued absence," and were advised by them to procure another minister. The only light on this unfortunate situation is found in the reply made by the elders of the churches to whom the letter was addressed. In this reply we find:

> "We do offer our opinion on their case as followeth, viz., that a Pastor, without express consent of his people, desisting of the duty of his charge and function, merely for secular advantages, and taking no heed to the ministry which he hath received of the Lord to fulfill it, nor to the flocke over which the Holy Ghost hath made him overseer, to feed the flocke of God, &c, for two years together delaying his return, notwithstanding many faire advantages offered him for the same, and signifying unto his people neither any justifiable reasons of his absence, nor any resolved intention of speedy return, is faulty before God: and his people are not to blame if they use all Evangelical endeavors to settle themselves with another Pastor, more spiritually and more fixedly disposed."

By this extract we gather that the absent pastor was practising some other profession that was proving more lucrative than that of the ministry. No records were left the church when he was forced to retire, and it is believed that he took them with him when he removed.

The next settled minister was the Rev. Nathaniel Eells, ordained June 4, 1704, six years after the dismissal of Mr. Lawson. For three years after his settlement, Mr. Eells preached in the meeting-house east of Union Bridge road. By this time the society had outgrown the house built in 1680, and in June, 1707, the third meeting-house was raised on what was known for many years as "Meeting-house Hill," now only a sand pit, a few rods south of the present church and directly south of the "tomb yard."

This house was used during the pastorates of Mr. Eells, Mr. Dorby, and a part of that of Dr. Barnes.

Mr. Eells preached to the society until his death, in 1750, at the age of seventy-two years. His forty-six years of service were singularly successful and happy, and from a small society his congregations had increased so largely that a larger house was needed as early as 1739.

In 1751, the society ordained the Rev. Jonathan Dorby, who died three years later. Mr. Dorby was a nephew of Judge John Cushing, 2d, the father of the Chief Justice, and while in Scituate resided in his uncle's family at Walnut Tree Hill.

Rev. David Barnes was given a unanimous call to the parish in August of the same year, and was ordained on November 27, 1754. Dr. Barnes' pastorate continued for fifty-seven years, and on his retirement from active ministry, in 1809, the Rev. Samuel Deane was ordained as his colleague, February 14, 1810.

The period of Dr. Barnes' pastorate was one of considerable prosperity until the troubles that resulted in the Revolutionary War became acute enough to be felt financially in the little country town. Few Loyalists resided within its limits, and the few suspects soon proved their loyalty or neutrality. During the Revolution, his salary, paid in the depreciated currency of the period, amounted to little, and had it not been for the property belonging to his wife, financial difficulties would have been greater. These difficulties were borne in common with the rest of the community. It was a time of privation for all.

As a liberal Christian, Dr. Barnes seems to have been much in advance of his day. He was considered an agreeable preacher at all times, but in middle life had developed a marked popularity throughout the section where he was known.

Rev. Samuel Deane, at the age of twenty-six, became the pastor of the South Parish at the high tide of its prosperity. The congregations were large, and no controversy had troubled his people such as was taking place in many places. These were the days of church dissensions

between the liberal and conservative elements; the days that marked the division between the Trinitarians and the Unitarians. In this connection, a contemporary has said: "Mr. Deane never embroiled his people in quarrels not their own and they were kept apart from the controversy that was dividing many churches."

Mr. Deane belonged to the liberal wing, as did nearly all the ministers of the first churches of the Old Colony. Mr. Deane's influence upon the church and community was very strong. His popularity was great in his church and with all who came in contact with him. He was a man of poetic sentiment, and unusually learned in the natural sciences. Few of his writings have been published, but his "History of Scituate," published in 1831, is widely known.

The years of Dr. Barnes' and Mr. Deane's pastorates, from 1754 to 1834, a period of eighty years, may be called the years of greatest growth. When the present edifice was completed, in 1830, every pew was taken and well filled.

Mr. Deane lived only three and a half years after the dedication of the new church, and the society was without a pastor for more than two years.

In October, 1836, began the pastorate of a most remarkable man, that of Samuel Joseph May, at that date Agent of the Massachusetts Anti-Slavery Society. Throughout his whole life he was the reformer as well as the pastor. No wrong was too trivial or too great to be rectified with all the force of his character. Before settling in the ministry, a visit to the South had made him determine that the abolition of slavery must come, and he then declared that he would take a decided hand in it. So it was with the Temperance question.

The American Total Abstinence Society was formed at this time, and into this cause Mr. May threw his whole heart and the influence of his eloquent tongue. In Scituate, he found a wide field of labor for the lines in which he had become interested,— the improvement of

the common schools, Total Abstinence, Universal Peace, and the Anti-Slavery cause.

Soon after coming to South Scituate, Mr. May gathered the young people of his society in the pews of the gallery of the church and organized the first Sunday-school, with a membership in the beginning of about twenty-five members. He instituted the "Cold Water Army," composed of children from all parts of the undivided town of Scituate, nearly five hundred in number. They marched through the streets with Mr. May at their head, with music, and banners flying, and presented quite an imposing appearance. They had picnics in the groves and fields, many of them given the names of famous battlefields of history. The large field near his home was christened the "Field of Waterloo." At least two of the banners of the army have been preserved as interesting relics.

After a six years' pastorate, said by him to have been six of the happiest years of his life, Horace Mann persuaded him to undertake the principalship of the Lexington Normal School, and he removed from South Scituate in the fall of 1842. Occasional visits were made to his old parish here; the last one, during the summer of 1867, was shortly before his death.

The parish was without a settled pastor until the following spring, when a call was extended to William Oxnard Moseley, of Newburyport, who remained four years.

The next minister of the church was the Rev. Caleb Stetson, a man of mature years and experience, who had been twenty-one years the pastor of the Unitarian Church at Medford, Mass. Like his friend, Samuel J. May, he was devoted to the Anti-Slavery cause, and was one of the early advocates and prime movers for Total Abstinence.

Mr. Stetson was a descendant of Cornet Robert Stetson, of Scituate, and was pastor of the church of his ancestor from 1848 to 1858. The question is often

asked, how a church in so small a community could draw to its pulpit men of such intellectual ability as Mr. May and Mr. Stetson. The answer is that they were reformers, and at this period (the Anti-Slavery days) such men were not welcomed in most places.

In September, 1859, a call was extended to the Rev. William A. Fuller, who was installed in November of that year, and remained until the autumn of 1864. He was much interested in the Sunday-school, and visited each home in his search for children to be enrolled, and was able to gather one hundred and twenty-five members. The first special observance of Christmas in the church was arranged by him, and the service, which was an innovation in this section, drew a large audience.

Mr. May had always kept in close touch with his former parish, and was aware that they were seeking for an acceptable candidate to succeed Mr. Fuller. Some time during the winter of 1864, he urged the Rev. William H. Fish, who for some years had been an agent of the American Unitarian Association Missionary Society in Central New York, to go to South Scituate as a candidate. This he did during the summer of 1865, and a call was extended him which he accepted, and he began in November his twenty-year pastorate.

Mr. Fish began his labors as a Unitarian in New York State. There he had taken an active part in the Anti-Slavery struggle. Both there and at South Scituate he was devoted to Universal Peace, Anti-Slavery, Temperance, and Equal Rights. The James Library is the greatest monument to his twenty-year service. It was founded by Josiah Leavitt James, of Chicago, in 1871, but its fulfillment was made possible by Mr. Fish's untiring effort.

The changing conditions of modern life were ending the long pastorates in country churches with the passing of the ministers of Mr. Fish's generation. Eight short pastorates, extending over a period of thirty-four years, bring the history of the church up to date.

This church, founded in 1642, has for the two hundred and seventy-nine years of its life been the Community Church, ministering to people of all denominations. Until 1730 it was the only church in that part of Old Scituate now known as Norwell, and it has been the only church in its immediate community since its organization. Its broad and liberal Covenant of 1642 remains unchanged, and is the one subscribed to at the present day. It ends with this phrase, significant of the thoughts of its framers, and applicable to conditions that have since existed: "We shall not refuse into our society such of God's people, whose hearts God shall incline to joyne themselves unto us, for the good of their souls." And now, "in the freedom of the truth, and the spirit of Jesus Christ," they still "unite for the worship of God, and the service of man."

St. Andrew's Church

A SERVICE of the Church of England was conducted in the meeting-house of the First Society, on Meeting-house Lane, on Wednesday, July 28, 1725. This service marked the beginning of Episcopacy in Scituate.

Rev. Timothy Cutler, rector of Christ Church (Old North Church, Salem Street, Boston), one of the ablest preachers and most influential clergymen of the colony, is said to have come to Scituate "on the invitation of Lieut. Damon and another gentleman of large estate," who acted as spokesmen for a respectable number of influential people.

It does not seem probable that Dr. Cutler would have come to Scituate unless there had been a reasonably strong desire for such a service from a respectable number of citizens of that place. That this number was both large and influential is quite evident; to be sure, they were gathered from a considerable territory, comprising not only different parts of Scituate, but of Marshfield, Pembroke, and Hanover.

It seems a little singular that the name of Lieut. Zachary Damon should have been the only one handed down to posterity as the chief mover of this action. Mr. Daniel E. Damon, in the "History of Plymouth County," says, in regard to Lieut. Damon's connection with it: "This may be true, but that Lieut. Damon, then seventy-three years of age, should actively interest himself in having services which he did not believe in, performed in that house, seems hardly credible." Lieut. Damon belonged to and attended the First Church, although at the time he is said to have been not wholly in sympathy with the pastor, the Rev. Mr. Bourne. The other name connected with Damon's doubtless was Benjamin Stockbridge, as this family was the only wealthy and influential one of the First Parish known to have become early members of St. Andrew's. His son, Dr. Benjamin, was later a vestryman of the parish for twenty-nine years previous to his death, and was annually chosen to represent the church at the convention.

Although Dr. Cutler's weekday service was conducted in a quiet and inoffensive manner, it is not remarkable that the members of the First Church should have considered that advantage had been taken of the absence of their young pastor, and that their meeting-house, although owned by the parish and not the church, had been put to unwarranted use. Religious controversy was their chief mental stimulus in those early days; besides, their church had earlier been divided by contention, whereby they had lost the spiritual and material support of a large part of their members, and the prospect of another thinning of their ranks through the establishment of a church of another faith was not an agreeable one.

For these reasons, they were anxious to minimize the importance and size of the audience present at the first service, which was said to have numbered between seventy and eighty, and to show that the members of their own church were conspicuous by their absence;

therefore, they declared it to consist of only three men of Scituate, a number of dissatisfied members of other churches of adjoining towns, and about forty schoolboys. If any women were present at the service, they were of no consequence, as they had nothing to do with the government of churches at that period.

Although scoffed at by the people of the parish, Dr. Cutler was sufficiently impressed by this gathering to consider this a good chance of establishing a church of the Episcopal faith.

In view of the religious intolerance of the times in respect to denominational differences, it is not singular that the feeling in the First Parish was both intense and bitter. For a time the controversy between the two factions ran high, each side utilizing the newspapers of the day to set forth their respective positions.

No other service of the Church of England seems to have been held in Scituate for two or three years. In 1727, Rev. Ebenezer Miller began his ministry over a church in Old Braintree, now Christ Church, Quincy. He conducted services at times for the people of Scituate, in a private house, to an audience as large as the house could hold, in this way keeping the people of the faith together.

In 1721,* a church was erected, with a seating capacity of one hundred and fifty, by Ebenezer Stetson, probably at his own expense and upon Stetson land, for in 1733 it was deeded to the society by Ebenezer Stetson and his wife, Lydia (Barker) Stetson. Its location was on the summit of what has come to be known as "Church Hill," that prior to that date seems to have been used as a burial place by the Stetson family, and was probably owned wholly or in part by that family, although lands to the south of the hill had, in 1699, been laid out by the town as "Common Lands." In 1725, ten acres were added to this common, "for burial purposes and a training field."

The location was a convenient one for the churchmen of several surrounding towns, and served them until 1745,

**Editors of second edition believe this date should be 1731.*

when a smaller mission church was built in Marshfield. Somewhat later, this mission built another church in Marshfield Hills Village, then known as Pine Tree Hill, on the site of the present G. A. R. Hall. The building on Church Hill was of wood, in the style of the Episcopal churches of the day, with a bell-tower and a bell.

November 30, 1731, Dr. Miller again officiated, and then expressed his willingness to serve them, as far as he was able, in connection with his duties in Braintree, should the society not think it best to send a missionary to Scituate.

Having petitioned the "Honorable Society" to send them as missionary the Rev. Addington Davenport, their petition was granted. He thus became the first resident minister of the parish, with a salary of £60 a year. His record under the date of November 10, 1735, says that the first two Sundays services were largely attended, but at the first Holy Communion there were only three recipients.

The establishment of a church of a different faith caused much uneasiness in both the First and Second societies. Taxes for the support of the church were levied on all taxpayers of the town, whatever their religious belief, and a refusal to pay those taxes meant a considerable fine, or a term in the county jail, so that having to contribute to the support of two churches was a heavy burden to the members of the new society, and must have retarded its growth. On the part of the older societies, the prospect of losing the support of those allying themselves with the newer one meant heavier taxes for those remaining. This complicated the situation and delayed the completion of the church. In 1741, the Second Parish began to remit the charges due from the members of St. Andrew's.

Violent opposition to the establishment of a Church of England was made by the people of the surrounding towns, and especially in Scituate, where the church was located.

Mr. Davenport entered into no public controversy with people about him, and remained the rector of St. Andrew's until 1737. His congregations in Scituate numbered about seventy or eighty, mostly from Scituate and Hanover. The communicants were twenty-eight.

His rectory was located near the apex of the land at the junction of River and Common Streets, north of Church Hill. The dwelling house was blown down in a violent gale soon after 1800, and no trace of its cellar is now to be seen, although the ancient well can be found.

At the time of his removal, he conveyed this estate to the "Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts," for the use forever of the ministers of St. Andrew's. In 1817, five acres and three rods of land were sold to Benjamin Palmer for $302.05, and the remaining one acre and seventeen rods to Elisha Tolman for $161.52, it being situated opposite the latter's residence. The proceeds of these sales were added to a fund established two years earlier for the Support of Religious Worship in the Episcopal Society of St. Andrew's, in Hanover. The date of Mr. Davenport's removal, and that of the beginning of his successor's ministry, is not definitely known, but is supposed to have been in 1737.

The Rev. Charles Brockwell was the second resident minister. His ministry was of short duration. In 1771, during Mr. Thompson's ministry, an addition was made to the east end of the church.

At the time of his death, in 1775, he was in his sixty-fourth year, and had not been in the best of health for some time; but his death was hastened, all accounts agree, by some "uncivil treatment" experienced at the hands of the Patriots. It is said that they entered his house, and seized and destroyed his library, together with the records of the church since its foundation, in 1730.

In 1774, the Committee of Safety and Inspection, chosen by the town, had under surveillance a considerable list of townspeople whose loyalty was suspected. On this list were the names of members of St. Andrew's,—

Benjamin James, Ebenezer Stetson, William Haskins, John Stetson, Benjamin Stockbridge, Charles Stockbridge, Charles Curtis, and Samuel Stetson. All cleared themselves, declaring their loyalty to the Patriots' cause, except Charles Curtis, who left town and became a British officer in New York.

Realizing, after his own unhappy experience, that the position of rector of St. Andrew's would be such that few would care to assume its responsibilities during these troublous times, Mr. Thompson, upon his death-bed, expressed his desire that Rev. Edward Winslow, of Braintree, serve the church as frequently as he could, until a successor should be chosen, and it was arranged in accordance with his wish.

The following June, 1776, a service was held before a large congregation from the united churches of Scituate and Marshfield, hoping by union to hold the societies together. News of the holding of this service reached the Committee of Safety, and that same evening Mr. Winslow was cited to appear before it, to answer to the charge of sowing discord and dissention. In company with one of the wardens of St. Andrew's, he went before this committee, consisting of some ten or twelve persons, a local minister (probably the Rev. Dr. Barnes, a noted pacifist in ecclesiastical matters), and the local magistrate. This magistrate repeated some verses from the "Book of Common Prayer," in which the prayers for His Majesty and the Royal Family were offered, stating all they had against Mr. Winslow was the *public* usage of these seditious utterances on the preceding day, and asking him if he were sincere in so doing. Receiving an affirmative answer, the magistrate informed him that such usage was considered inimical to this country, and that holding a service here at this time only caused more discord, by keeping alive the resentment and division of opinion already promoted. The Committee of Safety finding him not inclined to submit to their directions, and as Mr. Winslow belonged to another town, they referred

the matter to the Committee of Safety of Braintree. This committee resolved and presented the name of Mr. Winslow to the General Court as that of a "contumacious fomenter of alienation from the United Colonies." The final action is not known.

It is believed that the records were seized and destroyed in that visit to the house of Rev. Mr. Thompson by the Town Committee of Safety, so that all the records of St. Andrew's to be found today begin in August, 1780.

The Rev. Samuel Parker, D. D., served St. Andrew's from 1780 to about 1783. As his successor, the Rev. Mr. William Willard Wheeler was chosen rector of the churches of Scituate and Marshfield, May 5, 1783. Four years after coming to Scituate he married Jane, daughter of the Rev. Mr. Thompson, and resided in the "rectory under the hill," with Mr. Thompson's widow. His ministry lasted about twenty-six years.

Following Mr. Wheeler's death, the society of St. Andrew's voted to erect a new church in Hanover, in the Four Corners Village, and on June 11, 1811, the present church was consecrated by Bishop Griswold, and services in the old church were discontinued. The old building was sold and taken down. The society had no rectory of its own until 1840,* when the present one was built.

A Bible printed in England in 1723, together with the carved wooden box in which it was sent, is in the possession of the society, but the "Book of Common Prayer" that accompanied it was that confiscated by the Committee of Safety in 1776, and never returned.

The subsequent history of St. Andrew's belongs to the town of Hanover, and is to be found in Dwelley's "History of Hanover."

The Universalist Church, Assinippi

UNWILLING to contribute to the support of two churches, and believing in the new doctrine of universal salvation, the people began a movement

**Editors of second edition believe this date should be 1849.*

in Scituate, in 1756, to form a Universalist Society. The first petition was made by the inhabitants of the northerly part of Hanover to be set off as a new parish. This part of Hanover had been carved out of the old territory of Scituate in 1732. The petitioners were refused the prayer of their petition; but in the following year they took the matter before the Legislature. Again they were unsuccessful. They failed once more, in 1771, but later they began upon a new church building which was completed by, if not before, 1792, for in that year the town of Hanover voted to permit Mr. Mellen to preach a few Sundays in this new church. This vote contains more or less sarcasm, for Mr. Mellen was an Orthodox minister. These people were, however, successful in 1812, when the Legislature incorporated them as a Universalist Society.

Thus, if not the first church of this faith, it was one of the first churches to be established in this county. It has numbered among its members residents of Scituate, Norwell, Hanover, Hingham, Duxbury, Plymouth, Halifax, Hanson, and other towns. The new parish was a Poll Parish. The corporators and their estates were taxed for church purposes in the new parish so long as they annually employed a minister. All other members of the parish were taxed in the old parish, as before. In order to escape taxes in the old parish, the new member must be formally admitted to the new parish, receiving a certificate of membership. When that certificate was filed with the clerk of the old parish, the holder of the certificate was released from taxation in the old parish.

This society may well claim to be the parent of most of the Universalist churches in neighboring towns. The persistency of the New England blood is shown by the fact that from two to five generations of the descendants of the original incorporators still continue to attend this church.

The only known picture of the first church building is that in Barry's "History of Hanover." The drawing from which this was made was from descriptions only of

the old building. It was a barn-like structure without steeple or bell, unplastered, with no paint, inside or out, without a stove, and with no organ or other musical instrument. Its double rows of windows were without either blinds or shades, and no colored glass aided to keep out the rays of sunshine. The roof pitched east and west, and in front a two-story porch extended from the ground to the eaves, with doors in front and on each side. There were doors also on the north and south. A gallery ran around three sides of the interior, which for seats was provided with benches only. The pulpit, on the west side, was built high aloft, and opposite it was the choir gallery. It had no cellar, and its foundation was of stones taken from the near-by hillsides. Its timbers were hewn from the neighboring woods or sawed in the Jacobs Mill. Every nail and spike in its construction was forged by hand. All the ornamental work, the doors and the window sashes, were made on the spot by neighborhood carpenters. The glass in the windows was the only part of the structure which could not be contributed by some member of the parish from his own farm or workshop.

In 1832, the second church of this society was erected upon the site of the old one. Its architecture was colonial, and, the worshipers were accustomed to believe, unusually beautiful. In the spire the first bell owned by the church was hung, and for more than sixty years it called the people to worship, pealing patriotically on the Fourth of July, alarming the countryside when conflagration threatened, and in sweet solemnity tolling the requiem for the dead. The building faced the east, and before its destruction by fire, in 1893, a church clock had been placed in its spire.

As it was originally built, one entered by three front doors an entry-way reaching across the entire structure. From the middle of the ceiling of this entry hung the big bell rope. On either side opened the doors into the body of the church. There was no center aisle, but the

side aisles led between pews unpainted and mahogany capped, to a massive mahogany pulpit rounded and polished standing on a platform as high as the pews. The uniformity of the wall in the rear of the pulpit was broken by a large crimson curtain hung and draped from a rounded top. From the center of the ceiling hung by a large chain a chandelier, in which was a shining brass hemisphere supporting glass arms twisted and shaped like a recumbent S. The "singing seats" filled the rear of the church, perched high in the gallery, and a small organ accompanied the singing.

During the sixties the interior was remodeled. The pulpit was lowered and became a reading desk. The drapery behind it was removed and frescoing substituted. The galleries were lowered and a church organ was installed. The whole interior was frescoed and the pews were painted. The chandelier was taken away, and so were the pew doors.

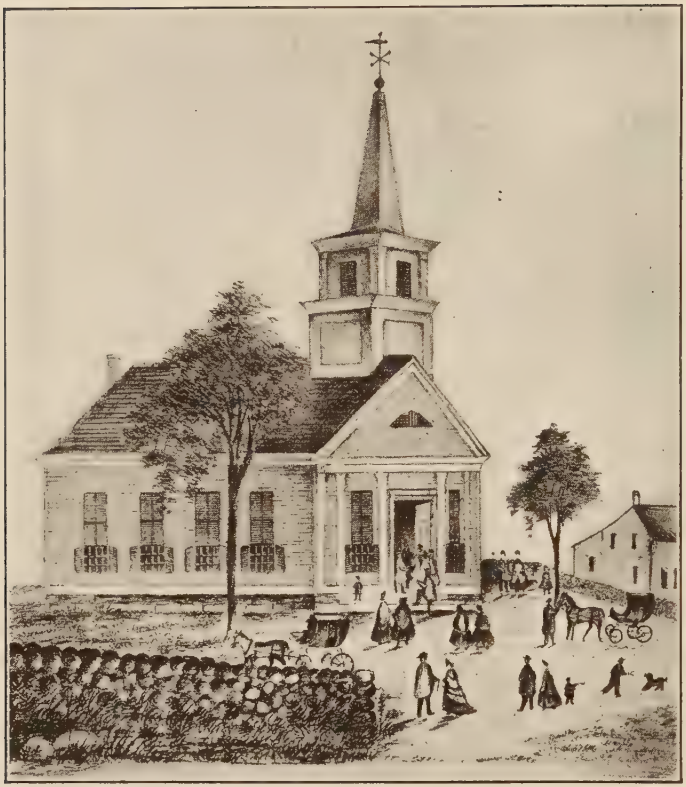
June 21, 1893, during the progress of still further repairs, the edifice was burned.

In the early days to which this record is principally devoted, the clergymen officiating here were men of strong characteristics. John Murray and Hosea Ballou have occupied the pulpit. Dr. A. A. Miner, for many years the leader of Universalism, has preached here.

Mrs. Hannaford and Mary A. Livermore have spoken from this pulpit, and in more recent years, Prof. Shipman and Dr. Emerson have officiated at its desk. John S. Barry, the historian of Hanover and Massachusetts, was also its pastor.

The Rev. Robert L. Killam, known for many years as "Father"Killam, was a beloved pastor. He preached the last sermon in the old church and the dedicatory discourse in the new. On this occasion the Rev. Hosea Ballou was the speaker of the afternoon.

After the fire, in 1893, the society showed its recuperative power by dedicating its new church (the present one) in a year almost to a day from the burning of the old one.



First Meeting-house on Brook Street

The Methodist Episcopal Church

METHODIST Church work in the United States was organized in one great circuit, soon after the War of the Revolution, by Francis Asbury, who regularly traveled the circuit over and over for thirty years.

The early Methodists believed that a change of preachers at definite intervals was good for both preacher and people, affording each society an opportunity to be served by the ablest and most gifted of men in turn.

At first no preacher was allowed more than two years in one place; afterwards the time was extended to three years; while at present the relation between pastor and people may be continued for whatever period is mutually desired.

About 1807, an itinerary circuit was formed embracing the towns between Dorchester and Duxbury. For years there was not a church building in this forty-mile circuit. Meetings were held in schoolhouses, barns, or in the homes of the members, and it was counted a privilege to entertain the preacher on his circuit.

F. H. Morgan says: "The typical circuit rider was a tall man, full of brawn and muscle, tough as a pine-knot, clothed in long, black clerical garb, with conventional white tie; riding horseback with saddlebags, his home wherever night overtook him, his audience room some backwoodsman's hut, a convenient barn, or the open air." Roads were few, and travelers from Boston to Duxbury followed the shore and crossed North River at White's Ferry.

The first Methodist meetings known to have been held in Scituate were conducted in a barn on Willow Street belonging to one John Bates, who was perhaps the most prominent Methodist of that time.

It must have had rude seats and fittings, for it was used as a place of worship for a number of years. Services were held every Sunday; if no ordained preacher was available, some local preacher or lay-brother read the Scriptures, exhorted, and prayed, whenever "two or three were gathered together."

John Bates was affectionately called "Father" Bates by everyone. It was customary then to call each other "brother" and "sister;" the older ones, as a mark of respect, being called "uncle" and "aunt." John Bates was a son of the keeper of Scituate Light in 1812; he had a large family who for years helped sustain the church their father loved. Rebecca and Abigail were his sisters.

In 1819, the New England Conference contained one hundred churches. "Father" Taylor, called the "Sailor Preacher," was a member of this conference, and for years took his turn on the circuit, being at Scituate in 1819. Deane's "History of Scituate" says: "In 1825 a Methodist Society was organized and they were legally exempted from the ministerial taxes of the First Congregational Society."

The first Methodist church was built in 1826, on Brook Street, on the site now owned and occupied by Mrs. Seth Litchfield. It was a building about sixty feet long by forty-five feet wide, with three windows on each side, a high, raised pulpit at the north end, with a gallery for the choir at the south end. It must have looked very plain and bare, with its white plastered walls and pine wood finish, but the people loved it and filled its pews every Sunday, not only once but three and four times.

There was not much said in those days about the women, but there is no doubt they did their share. "Aunts Susan and Fanny Windsor" and "Aunt Betty Cummings," as well as "Grandma Jenkins," must not be forgotten for their devotion to the upbuilding of the church.

The Sunday-school was first organized in 1841, with Fred Hammond as superintendent.

In 1842, a great revival swept the country. The Millerites believed that the world would come to an end on the third of April, 1843. Though they found themselves mistaken, their faith in God was not shaken, and many Millerites joined with the Methodists in 1843, and worked with interest under the leadership of Rev. Stephen Puffer, who was much beloved for his strong character and energy. Every church which he served during his long life owes him much, as the records prove.

Rev. Nathaniel Bemis proved to be an enthusiastic pastor. During his stay of two years a belfry was added to the church and a bell purchased.

The society now had a fairly good church edifice, but something was still needed. There had been great difficulty in finding a place for the preacher's family to live. So about this time a company was formed for the purpose of building a parsonage. It was built by Philip Reynolds, who afterwards removed to Brockton, where he engaged in the manufacture of organs. A small reed organ made by him has been in use in the prayer-meeting room since 1868. In 1858, Ambrose Jenkins died, leaving a legacy to the society of fifteen hundred dollars, which enabled them to buy the parsonage which has been used ever since.

Rev. William Leonard, an Englishman, came in 1858. The church must have been in good working spirit and the pastor an inspired leader, for extensive improvements were planned and carried out. The church was sawed into two parts, one part moved back, and a piece built in which gave room for four rows of pews. Pews were then owned by individuals, and these new ones, being in the most desirable part of the church, were sold for enough to pay the whole cost of alteration. The high pulpit had been replaced by one that was low and square, with an altar rail of white enamel, the pews and woodwork being finished in the same way. There were inner doors from the vestibule covered with green baize, and inside blinds were of the same dark green color. Two stoves placed under the gallery, with long pipes running the length of the church, heated it comfortably. The work was finished just before the New Year. What a trial to their faith when on July 4, 1865, this attractive church was burned to the ground! It was a total loss, as it was not insured.

The society bought Union Hall at this time for a place of worship. While they were considering ways and means, they heard of a church in Nantucket to be sold; Michael Welch and Philip Reynolds were appointed a committee to go there and ascertain if it would be feasible to buy it, take it down, and ship it to Scituate.

They reported on their return that it would not pay, and the project was abandoned. Widow Gorham, a loyal Methodist of Nantucket, entertained them while there, and expressed much sympathy at their loss. Some years later, she left a bequest of one thousand dollars to the society at Scituate, which proved that her sympathy was genuine.

In April, 1866, a meeting was held in Union Hall by the trustees in regard to building a new church. In December, 1866, it was voted to buy the Cushing Vinal lot on Central Street for two hundred and twenty-five dollars, and E. Parker Welch was appointed to sell the lot on Brook Street. Meanwhile the "very good bell," which Rev. Nathaniel Bemis had put into the church belfry, had lain on the ground in pieces since the fire. The fragments were gathered up by Franklin Damon, and kept temporarily in a shed loft. Later they were taken to Boston to be sold, and because of the amount of silver in the metal it was sold for three hundred and fifty dollars, and the unexpected sum was added to the building-fund. The new church was dedicated in 1868, and in 1869 all debts were paid.

Beautiful for situation, the church overlooked the village. It had a seating capacity of about two hundred and twenty-five. The choir for many years sang in the tower end of the church, but this was later curtained off from the auditorium and formed a convenient room for small meetings of various kinds. When the church was finished, E. Parker Welch bought Union Hall, and making some alterations and improvements, let it to the Sons of Temperance and other organizations. A gift of five hundred dollars from Capt. William Vinal, a whaler of New Bedford, and a native of Scituate, made it possible for the society to buy it back again, as there being no vestry in the church, the hall was much needed for suppers and socials. This was the upper part only, the lower part and the land being the property of the town of Scituate.

The pastorate of G. W. Ballou was marked by a revival which added numbers to the church. There was also special interest in religion under Rev. G. W. Wright.

In 1873, during Rev. Charles S. Nutter's pastorate, the bell and clock were bought. The clock was purchased by the help of the townspeople, and was always kept in repair by contributions from the public.

Rev. Henry B. Hibben, a retired chaplain of the United States Army, was stationed here for three years. He was a brilliant man, but broken in health. His private income made him indifferent to the matter of salary, but the use of the furnished parsonage and varying sums of money were given him each year.

In 1880, the church was without a pastor, and as the membership had been much depleted by removals and deaths, the way did not seem clear to call a preacher from the Conference, so a student from Boston University filled the pulpit.

The church was at a low ebb financially in 1890; a Mr. Richards was appointed by the Conference, but failed to appear. In 1893 came the Van Natters, from New York; he, scholarly, courtly, and energetic; she, friendly and tactful. From this time on there was a change. The Ladies' Aid Society again bestirred itself; the Sunday-school grew; the people, under new leadership, took courage; new helpers rose up, and the years that were lean seemed remote.

When R. C. Miller came, in 1896, the workers were much in need of encouragement; he hastened to grasp the situation, and with characteristic vigor and enthusiasm set about improving it. The inside of the church was renovated and a pipe organ purchased, the money for which had been earned by eight members. This project was started by Frances Adelaide Merritt, familiarly known as "Bessie," a music teacher, who had studied at the New England Conservatory of Music, and having greatly longed for an organ in the church she loved, interested a handful of women to start a fund

to buy one. They formed a society called the "Organ Society;" they worked for thirteen years for this purpose, and the organ was bought and installed at the time of the renovation.

Frank R. Baker, a student-pastor, organized the Epworth League, which was for many years a very important auxiliary of the church. In 1898 came Joseph Cooper, an Englishman, sent by the Conference. In the severe storm of that year the church property was somewhat damaged.

The first record of the "Ladies' Union," so called, is the record book of the secretary, Miss Mary S. Bouvé, who held that office for seven years. An unusual service which demands mention was that of Miss Bouvé, who "blowed" the organ from the time it was installed for twenty years as a free-will offering. Not in words but in deeds, she said, "Silver and gold have I none, but such as I have I give unto thee."

In 1902, the church received a legacy, helping the society to make necessary repairs. Memorial windows, gifts from individuals, of stained glass were substituted at this time.

The church has always found friends in many who were not members, but who were interested enough to attend services, and who, feeling that the influence of such a church was needed in the community, were ready to give financial aid.

The church was burned in January, 1918; an effort to raise funds to rebuild, launched by the pastor, Rev. Harvey E. Dorr, met with a generous response from the residents of the town and the summer people, and the present building, the result of this endeavor, was dedicated in 1920.

Trinitarian Congregational Church

THE history of the Unitarian and Trinitarian churches having been identical for nearly two hundred years, it will be found under the First Parish

CONGREGATIONAL CHURCH

Church, while this chapter will begin with the separation, in 1824-25.

It was under Rev. Nehemiah Thomas' ministry that part of his flock separated from the church and formed a new society. This separation caused great dissension, and party spirit ran high. Even families were divided. One instance was that of Dea. Ward Litchfield—he and his wife Betsey were very religious and equally decided in their views. When Sunday came, he, with five sons and one daughter, went to the new church, but Betsey, having seen no reason for changing her religious views, took her son Davis and went to the Unitarian church.

Another story shows that Betsey, who was of the Merritt family, had the courage of her convictions on all occasions, as it is said that at this time of much discussion as to ways and means, her husband, Deacon Ward, notified her that there was to be a minister's meeting at his house to discuss important subjects, and not wanting

to burden her too much, as he stood a little in fear of her, he told her in the morning they were coming, and would want something to eat, but that she might prepare a *light supper*. When they went out to supper that night, there was the table, spread with twelve candles burning, and that was all there was on the table. He tried to explain that his wife took it literally, and then he laughed, and they all laughed, and the story goes that she was behind the buttery door laughing also.

February 6, 1825, the old church voted "to renew and adopt the Old Covenant as the Covenant of this Church." Accordingly, the dissenting leaders, with their sympathizers, felt constrained to leave the old meeting-house in which their fathers had worshiped, and provide another place of worship. On November 16, 1826, the First Trinitarian Congregational Church in Scituate was dedicated, and Rev. Paul Jewett was installed as its minister, where he remained until July 18, 1833.

A few years after the settlement of Rev. Paul Jewett at Scituate, the church found it hard to raise the money for his salary, and on July 18, 1833, a council was called to dissolve the relations existing between pastor and people. From statements made before the council, it appears that the most perfect harmony existed between the pastor, the church, and the people, and that the only reason of their separation at this time was the inability to pay his salary. Rev. Luke Ainsworth Spofford was installed over the church May 20, 1835, but on account of poor health remained only a year. His successor, Rev. Phineas Smith, was installed September 2, 1840, and served the church one year. The ministry of Rev. Daniel Wight, Jr., in Scituate, extended from September 28, 1842, to April 20, 1858. Mr. Wight and his bride, Lucy Flint, found the church at Scituate depressed and embarrassed; but in five years all debts had been paid, the church was self supporting, and its activities were in lively exercise.

In response to a circular sent out to "Natives and Friends of Scituate," together with the efforts of the church people, the factory-like steeple of the meeting-house was replaced by the present spire, and its sweet-toned bell procured.

The people of this church were widely scattered, and Mr. Wight often held meetings in the distant neighborhoods. In Beechwood he gave the equivalent of a year's pastorate during the sixteen years of his life in Scituate. The almost ideal relation between pastor and people was ended with mutual regret, on account of the illness of his second wife, Mary S. Briggs, whom he married October 4, 1855.

From this time on, the pastorates have been varied and mostly of short duration, the church continuing its activities and wielding strong influence for good in the community.

Note: Mr. Wight had obtained during his Scituate pastorate the bail of the original "Old Oaken Bucket" of Samuel Woodworth, which has lately been given to the Scituate Historical Society.

First Baptist Church, North Scituate

EARLY in the last century there began to be a stir in the churches of the Old Colony, and soon those of evangelical faith withdrew from the old churches which had become non-evangelical. Occasionally a young Baptist minister came from Marshfield and preached in Abiel Cudworth's house.

In 1818, several persons met at Capt. Ezra Vinal's house, organized a Baptist Society, and adopted a constitution. No tax was to be laid on persons or property, but each member agreed to subscribe something every year for the support of the church.

In 1821, the society obtained the unfinished chambers of Mr. James Cudworth's house at the Center for a place of worship.

In 1825, a church was organized with thirty-two members, and a chapel was built at the Center, which is now

Grand Army Hall. Mr. Zeba Cushing was the builder. It was a plain building, with pulpit, pews, and seats for the singers. These were back of the pews between the two outside doors, raised one step for the men and two for the women.

The leader, Zeba Cushing, gave the keynote, and the others sang without any musical instrument, except for a short time when Thomas Tilden Bailey, Sr., played a small bass viol.

The church was lighted by oil lamps. A standard with two branches was at each end of the pulpit, and a chandelier for eight lamps hung from the center of the room.

In 1826, Rev. Adoniram Judson, Sr., of Plymouth, was invited to supply the pulpit for six months, and died in Scituate. His son, Adoniram Judson, Jr., was a missionary to Burma. In 1830, Rev. Edward Seagrave became pastor. Though not a great preacher, he was ready for every good word and work. He had printed the Articles of Faith, Church Covenant, names of constituent members, and a brief history, of which one hundred copies were printed.

In 1832, the women formed a missionary and sewing circle, which rejoiced in the name of the "Scituate Baptist Female Mutual Religious Improvement Association," in which money was raised by annual dues for church work. There was always a Thursday evening neighborhood prayer meeting "at early candlelight."

An epoch in the church came in 1842, the "Great Revival." Jacob Knapp, an evangelist, came to Boston, and the work of the Holy Spirit was apparent, and spread from town to town. Religion became the topic of conversation, and many, both young and old, were added to the church.

The first baptism was on Saturday afternoon, April 9, when sixteen candidates were baptized by Father Conant, who was then pastor at Hanover. Others followed until about seventy were added to the church. These baptisms took place on the river below Bound

THE "TWO SPIRES"
Pencil Sketch by Henry Turner Bailey

Brook, at a place where a few years earlier vessels were built, and hence called "The Landing." It was the baptizing place for more than forty years, the houses near by being opened for the convenience of the candidates in dressing.

With the increase of members in the church came the necessity of enlargement. This was done by the addition of a vestibule, with a gallery over it for the choir, which was lighted by a large window in front, and finished with a cupola.

The day of the re-dedication, Franklin Damon was ordained minister. He had taught school in town the previous winter and supplied the pulpit, and was thus drawn into pastoral work. Later he left, to continue his studies, but came again to Scituate for a wife.

In 1843, Rev. Thomas Conant was called to the charge of the church. He was a man filled with the spirit of the Master, who went about doing good, "a living epistle known and read of all men." His wife was a worthy helpmeet. He resigned in 1853, after ten years' service, but still remained a resident of Scituate, having bought the house next the church at the Center, that had belonged to James S. Briggs, a treasurer of the church for thirty-two years. Living on the corner so near the church, their house was the home for supplies and candidates.

In those days of two services and long distances, people took their lunch with them, and the Briggs house was always open that those who wished might come in and quench their thirst from the never-failing well, while in the house a cup of tea was ever ready for an elderly or feeble person. Besides this Sunday work there was the care of the church, and when there was no sexton, the daughter, Cynthia Briggs, afterwards Mrs. Anthony Gray, often rendered that service.

In 1859, a group of happy converts came into the church while Mr. Tingley was pastor.

Soon a new problem arose. After more than thirty years of service the building needed extensive repairs.

The membership had increased more in the north part of the town, which was an open field for Christian work. With earnest prayer it was decided to build there. A plot of land was offered by George C. Lee as a donation, and in 1866 a committee was appointed to raise funds. Rev. William H. Kelton came from Maine at this time, and in May, 1868, it was decided to begin building, but to go no faster than money was pledged. As the funds were soon exhausted, the blank walls stood for a long time unfinished. A parsonage was begun at this time, however, as there was no place for the minister's family to live, and they were consequently separated. The church members again subscribed liberally, and gave of time and labor also. The parsonage was built and work on the church carried on to the point where the vestries were finished. In May, 1869, the first meeting was held in the new vestry. Business men interested in the old town gave money and the auditorium was finished.

The church was named the First Baptist Church, North Scituate. In the forefront of all the work and responsibility was George W. Bailey, senior deacon and church treasurer, a liberal giver and faithful worker. Services of dedication were held October 6, 1870. On March 12, 1871, Mr. Kelton preached his last sermon, and died April 4.

The church has had a succession of good pastors. From the death of Pastor Kelton to the sad and sudden death of Pastor Bartlett, in 1911, was a period of forty years, during which there were eight pastors. It is pleasant to note such kindly relations between pastors and people that when Rev. A. D. Spaulding resigned, he did not leave town, but took up the work of printing at what he appropriately named Bound Brook Press.

The fiftieth anniversary came in 1875. At this time the pews were free to all, current expenses to be met by contributions. A baptistry was built in 1882. In 1886, the church organ was bought.

The first and largest legacy ever received by the church came from Samuel Stillman Cudworth, of Boston, son of Dea. Abiel Cudworth.

From the beginning the women have been helpers in every way. They have responded to calls for help from the Women's Foreign Missionary Society of Boston, and formed a Home Mission Society; the young people have organized a Christian Endeavor Society; the Sewing Circle still supplies funds for needed improvements.

Methodist Episcopal Church at Church Hill

IN the old home of Samuel and Mary Stetson, parents of the late Rev. William H. Stetson, the Methodist Episcopal Church had her genesis. This old home, supposed to have been built before 1700, is still standing on Stetson Road. A brief account of it is found under "Seventeenth Century Houses."

Mrs. Stetson, whose maiden name was Mary Kimball, was the "Barbara Heck" of the society. She came from the old Bennet Street Church, Boston, and found in Capt. Zephaniah Talbot an aggressive Christian. By their untiring labor and constant zeal the first class was organized. Prominent among those who labored in this class were John Gardner, Lydia Stetson, and Katie and Patty Sylvester, the latter, two respected members of the African race.

The next place of worship was the schoolhouse on the "Common" north of Church Hill, to which the first itinerant preacher came. The class was joined in turn to churches in Scituate and South Abington (Whitman) many times.

Union Hall, a larger building, standing beside the schoolhouse on the "Common," was the next place of worship. From 1844 to 1852, the class grew strong enough to erect the present church edifice. The ground was broken that year by the Rev. L. B. Bates, of the

METHODIST CHURCH

Meridian Street Chapel of Boston. Rev. Nathan P. Philbrook's name is that connected with the building and dedication of the church. In 1885, a neat and cheerful vestry was added to the building by Mrs. Betsey Tolman.

The growth of the church has been gradual, and from the first has been a training-school for young men. Since the day L. B. Bates preached the first sermon

here, many young men have served the church. These ministers are scattered over the United States to the Pacific Coast, and some are in foreign mission work. This society can claim for its own the late Rev. William H. Stetson, whose early life was spent in this church, and who proved such an efficient worker for God; also the late John W. Willett, who was converted here. His conversion from infidelity was only less remarkable than his long, useful ministry.

The church has a fund, started many years ago by Katie and Patty Sylvester by a donation of $100, which has been increased from time to time. Mrs. Betsey B. Tolman was a generous contributor, and gave the society its parsonage.

Church of the Nativity

Roman Catholic Church

REV. JOHN THAYER, convert and missionary, was as far as known the first Catholic to come to Scituate. He was born in Boston in 1755, and died in

Limerick, Ireland, in 1815. His family was among the early Puritan settlers of New England. He was educated at Yale College, and became a Congregational minister, and as such served during the Revolutionary War as chaplain of a company of which John Hancock was commander. He was converted to the Catholic faith in 1783, ordained priest in Paris, 1787, and was the first native of New England ordained to the priesthood. In 1790, he was put in charge of a newly organized Catholic congregation in Boston. He left Boston in 1799, doing missionary work for a time in Virginia and Kentucky, going thence to Ireland in 1803.

Father Thayer visited Scituate in 1790, during which year he was a pastor in Boston.

Bishop Cheverus, a man of great distinction, first Bishop and Archbishop of Boston, who was later made Cardinal Archbishop of Bordeaux, France, visited Scituate in 1797. He was only a priest when he visited the South Shore.

In May, 1847, Daniel Ward, with his wife, three sons, and three daughters, and his partner, Miles O'Brien, with his daughter and niece, came from Boston and settled in Scituate. They owned a fishing schooner, and were very successful fishermen. For a year both families made their home in the Ephraim Young house on Highland Street, occupied later by the Misses Lewis. The coming of these people meant the beginning of the Catholic religion in Scituate. There was no Catholic church in the vicinity, and it meant a drive of miles to reach one. For all that, these two families kept the faith and practised the religious duties that every good Catholic lives up to, in their home. For years, when they could, they went to Boston to attend mass and perform other pious obligations.

Parishes were formed in Quincy and Randolph early in the fifties, and the few people who were here drove to those places on rare occasions for baptisms, marriages, and burials.

In cases of serious illness when death seemed probable, the priest came from miles away to give the last rites of the church to the dying. Miles O'Brien was the first Catholic prepared for death in Scituate, Father Rodden coming from Quincy. He was buried in Quincy, 1851.

About a year after settling here, Daniel Ward built a house on Third Cliff, probably the first house ever built there. As time went on relatives and friends of the first comers arrived, until at the end of ten years there was quite a large Irish colony; then these faithful people got together and made plans to have mass celebrated in Scituate.

Meanwhile Daniel Ward had prospered, and in 1857 built a new house on First Cliff, which was called the "Big House," and it was here the same year that mass was celebrated for the first time in Scituate, Father Sullivan, of Boston, being celebrant, with Father Gallagher, of Boston, assisting. It was an event in the lives of these people never to be forgotten. It was a year before they had mass again, and during that interval they went to the distant towns as before.

Randolph had become a parish with a church, and many of the towns near by were included in the parish. Father Roach came from Randolph to Scituate twice during the first year of his pastorate, later coming four times a year, remaining two days, giving him ample time to perform such religious duties as might be necessary. This custom was kept up until there was a resident pastor in Cohasset.

Families were large and the mothers were busy with the work of the homes. Often three or four men were included in the family, and it made much extra work for one family to entertain the priest every time he came. As a result of this difficulty, others offered their homes for the service. The vestments were always kept at the "Big House." Soon the congregation had increased to such an extent that a house was no longer large enough for the service. Miss Mary Clapp, a broad, liberal-minded

woman, heard of these difficulties, and as she owned a building on Union Street that had once been a schoolhouse offered it to the Catholics for a church. The offer was gladly accepted.

Just before the time set for Father Roach to come, some evil-minded person broke all the windows and doors, and damaged the interior to such an extent that the building was never used for a Catholic church. It was later used as a home by Mrs. Shadrack Curtis.

The first Catholic child born in Scituate was John F. Murphy, son of Patrick and Mary (Kane) Murphy, born August 8, 1852, still living at the corner of Willow Street and Jericho Road. He was baptized by Rev. Manassas Doherty, of Cambridge, on September 21, 1852.

Mary Ellen Duffy was baptized in 1857 by Father Sullivan, and was the first Catholic child baptized in Scituate.

The first Catholic couple married in town were Patrick Driscoll and Mary Gaynor, married by Father Roach, August 30, 1858.

John O'Riley was the first Catholic buried in Scituate. He fell from a lumber schooner near the mill gates, July 27, 1851, and was drowned. The Sons of Temperance, a society here, claimed the body, held a burial service, and buried it in Union Cemetery. Up to 1868 there was no Catholic cemetery.

Arthur Ward bought a field near Ticknor Hill hoping the parish would take it for a cemetery, and had his father buried there. The people were not in favor of the location. Then a Cemetery Association was formed consisting of about thirty men, all heads of families; the land where the cemetery now is was bought from a Mr. Richardson, and paid for by subscriptions from the members of this association. Arthur Ward had his father's body removed from the field and placed in the new cemetery, this being the first Catholic buried there.

Father Roach continued to come here till 1869, when a change was made, Hingham, Cohasset, and Scituate

becoming part of the Weymouth parish, with Rev. Hugh Smyth, the noted church builder, for pastor. It was impossible to hold services in a house any longer. Allen's Hall, the second floor of Paley Allen's grocery store, was hired, and services were held there until the church was built.

Now a Sunday-school was formed. Meanwhile, Father Smyth had proposed building a church, which was begun in the fall of 1872. The men of the parish dug the cellar and laid the stone foundation, gladly giving their services.

December 25, 1872, a day never to be forgotten by the Catholics of Scituate, the first mass was celebrated in the basement of the church; it was dedicated and named "Church of the Nativity."

Before work could begin on the church it was necessary to have money to work with; subscriptions were asked for, the sums given being in many cases out of all proportion to what these men were earning.

An event of great importance took place just three months after the first mass in the new church. March 25, 1873, His Grace, Archbishop Williams, came from Boston and administered the sacrament of confirmation. As Scituate was only a mission, not a parish, it was unusual for His Grace to perform this ceremony out of the parish church.

September 28, 1873, Martin Burke and Margaret Carroll were married in the vestry by Rev. Peter Leddy, curate, the first marriage in the new church.

Thanksgiving day, November 25, 1874, Edward Lynch, of Hingham, builder of the church, and Mary Doherty were married with a nuptial mass. They were the first couple to be married with this ceremony.

In 1875, the churches of Hingham, Cohasset, and Scituate were made into one parish, with Father Leddy, formerly curate, for pastor. Father Leddy died at Hingham in 1880, and was succeeded by Rev. Gerald Fagan, who came from Hingham every other week, remaining until Monday.

The demand for services every Sunday was so increased that in 1886 Cohasset was made a separate parish, with Scituate as a mission. Rev. M. J. Phelan was appointed the first Cohasset pastor. The next year he was transferred, and in 1887 Rev. J. P. Egan became the pastor of this district. A curate was sent to assist, and now, after twenty-two years, there would be mass every Sunday and holy day.

The upper part of the church was still in the rough, but under Father Egan the finishing of the church, in an artistic manner, was assured, when pews and stations of the cross were installed.

After ten years of work, Father Egan died, July 3, 1897, justly lamented.

In the spring of 1903, a summer chapel was built at North Scituate beach, and the first mass was celebrated July 5, 1903, by the pastor, Rev. William McDonough. Owing to the large increase of the summer colony at the Sand Hills, the Church of the Nativity became so crowded at the masses that an appeal was made to Cardinal O'Connell, with the result that Vinton's Hall was hired and mass celebrated there in 1913, since which time a chapel has been built.

Swedenborgian Chapel

A SOCIETY of New Jerusalem, Swedenborgian, was started about 1850, but passed out of existence after a few years.

Foremost in the movement were Capt. Seth Webb and Elijah Jenkins. Dr. Frank Thomas was an interested member, although he never relinquished his pew in the historic First Church, of which his father had been pastor.

Miss Mary Clapp, of Greenbush, the last of the family to occupy the old Clapp homestead near the "Tan Brook," was a strong supporter. She was the owner of the old Greenbush schoolhouse, which had been moved

from its old location, very near her home, to one on the Harbor road. This building, used by the society for a place of worship during its brief existence, is now a part of the house of Andrew Curtis.

John Maddock was "Reader" of the society at one time. He later became prominent in the Methodist Church.

Chapel at Sherman's Corner

THE people at Sherman's Corner were seemingly left out in the cold by the division of the town in 1849. This had been the Center where the Town House stood, which had been used not only for civic meetings but for lectures and entertainments. It was then moved about two miles, to the new town of South Scituate. The school district of this locality was also changed to the new center, and the children were obliged to go to the Grove Street District in Scituate.

The nearest church was two miles away, and religious services were held for several years in local homes.

A chapel was built in 1885 through the efforts of Mrs. Laura A. Jenkins, Mrs. Henrietta Prentiss, and Miss Sophia Sampson, where union services could be held. Ministers from Scituate, Marshfield, and other towns have generously given of their service.

Seaside Chapel, North Scituate Beach

THE Seaside Chapel, at the northeast corner of Collier Avenue and Ocean Avenue, was built in 1894, from plans by Henry T. Bailey. The builder was Billings H. Merritt, its seating capacity one hundred and twenty-five, and the money to pay for the building was subscribed largely by beach residents, while a few non-residents generously assisted. Among the latter was the late Henry Austen Seaverns, of North Scituate, whose contribution was very liberal. Visiting ministers usually conducted the services during the early years of the chapel,

after which, for a few summers, the Baptist Church at North Scituate was responsible for its management.

A short period of inactivity followed, and then the Episcopal Church took up the work, and for several seasons the service has been maintained by them through the summer months under the direction of Rev. H. K. Bartow, rector of St. Stephen's Church, Cohasset, with a student from the Episcopal Theological School at Cambridge as resident lay-reader, usually serving two summers.

The chapel property was originally held in trust by parties identified with the North Scituate Baptist Church, but a few years ago the connection between that organization and the chapel ceased, arrangements having been made by which the Weber Charities Trust succeeded to the ownership of the property. The present trustees hold the chapel as a place for Protestant Trinitarian worship, preferably of the Episcopal form, but while the order of worship is Episcopalian the services are emphatically for all, and are sustained by attendants representing various religious denominations.

Mills

AFTER the first dwellings had been erected, provision was made for a sufficient supply of food for the settlement. The sea provided fish, the forests game, and the Indian planting lands on the four cliffs and the "green field," cleared of timber, were ready for corn, therefore a mill for grinding it must be ready for the first harvest. This first mill was a windmill, built by William Gillson, in 1636, upon the southeast end of the Third Cliff, and with its sail-like arms rising above the waving corn that covered the four cliffs, then many acres larger in extent than now, must have been a goodly sight to the dwellers along Kent Street, telling them of plenty for the days to come, when the long, hard winter was before them. This was the first mill for grinding corn erected in Plymouth Colony; the only other corn mill was a pounding mill, erected in Plymouth in 1632. The Gillson windmill was the only grist-mill in Scituate until 1650.

The next necessity was a sawmill, to get out lumber for more comfortable frame dwellings, for the first rude houses were too primitive to be used long by the "Men of Kent," accustomed as they were, in their English homes, to dwellings provided with what comforts and conveniences the times allowed.

Isaac Stedman, afterwards a merchant in the town of Boston, came to Scituate about 1637, and settled in that part of the town called "the green bush." There was little or no natural water-power for milling purposes, but there were three large brooks, with ample water supply, that could be made to answer the purpose by the erection of dams and flooding of the natural basins. Stedman did this near his home on the First Herring Brook, thereby forming the beautiful pond, later made famous by the poet Woodworth. The sawmill that he

The Stockbridge Mill

built is mentioned in the records as early as 1640. By the erection of these two mills, Scituate's development was assured. Litchfield says, in speaking of Barnstable, in 1640: "Many of these first houses were made of timber and lumber brought from the sawmill at Scituate, the distance by water being short, and transportation by boats easy." Stedman desired to move to Boston, and found a purchaser, in 1646, for his Scituate property, in George Russell, from Hingham, who was the sole owner of the mill for ten years.

In 1650, John Stockbridge, a dweller on the Conihasset lands since 1638, and one of the "Partners" since 1646, built a grist-mill beside the Russell sawmill, and probably in company with Russell, for fifteen years later, Russell sells to John's son, Charles Stockbridge, one half of said mill. In 1656, he sold one-half interest in his sawmill to John Stockbridge.

About the same year (1656) the "Stockbridge mansion" house was built nearby on the shores of the pond. Strongly built, with portholes for defense against the Indians, it became the principal garrison house of the

settlement, and withstood the attack of 1676. Three sides were palisaded with logs, the fourth side being protected by the pond. This old garrison house was burned in 1830, and the present house, owned until lately by the Williams family, descendants of the Stockbridges, was built by Capt. Henry Bowers, a nephew of Madam Hannah Cushing, who had married Mary Stockbridge, a daughter of Dr. Charles. Stedman's house, later that of George Russell, was burned in 1712, and stood on the site of the Samuel Hatch house, now owned by Albert W. Garceau.

John Stockbridge's will, dated at Boston 1657, gave to his eldest son, Charles, his water-mill at Scituate, with house ground and orchard, together with all his working tools. Charles Stockbridge came from Charlestown to Scituate in 1662-63, and in 1665 became sole owner of both saw and grist mills, from that time until after 1830 known as the "Stockbridge Mills." They went to the youngest sons, Benjamin and Samuel, in the division of Charles Stockbridge's estate. Benjamin purchased his brother's interest, and in turn bequeathed the property to his son, Dr. Benjamin, from whom it descended to his son, Dr. Charles, and to his grandson, Dr. Charles, Jr., who died unmarried in 1827. Deane mentions them as belonging to the Stockbridge estate in 1830.

The later history of the mills is that of their connection with the Clapps, the present owners. Benjamin Clap, a great-grandson of Mr. Thomas Clap, who had settled in 1640 upon what is now known as the Jenkins farm, north of the pond, "run" the Stockbridge mills before 1800. In 1794, his son Thomas married for his first wife Emily Stockbridge, who, family tradition says, was a daughter of Dr. Charles, although her birth does not appear in the Vital Records. By his second marriage, to Mercy Bailey, Thomas Clapp had a family of twelve children. With the help of his sons Elijah, Franklin Bailey, and Harvey, Thomas Clapp "run" the mills

until 1828. After 1830, Elijah Clapp purchased them from the Stockbridge estate, and they have been Clapp property for three generations. Charles Stockbridge was given a perpetual contract to use the waters of the First Herring Brook for milling purposes, on the condition that he maintain and operate the grist-mill. To reimburse him, he might reserve for himself no more than one-sixteenth of every bushel of grain brought to be ground. The present owners took the property subject to the same conditions, and notwithstanding the fact that no grain has been carried to the mill for some years, they, on their part, it is said, stand ready to operate it.

More than two centuries and a half have passed since the erection of the mill by the "wide spreading pond," but with a little renewal, the old structure can be made ready for another century of service.

In 1653, James Torrey built a "clothing mill" a short distance up the same brook. Traces of its dam can yet be found, near Robert Haven Schauffler's log cabin. Although styled "clothing mill," it was probably a "fulling mill," for the dressing and "fulling" of the cloth woven by the women in the homes. James Torrey died in 1665, and the mill became the property of his son, Dea. James, who sold it as early as 1690 to Samuel Clap. Around 1750, Capt. John Clap, son of Samuel, had a grist and fulling mill on the same location, the latter probably the one built by Torrey one hundred years before.

By 1656, the settlement had expanded beyond the bounds of the Harbor and its adjacent sections. Many settlers had by this time followed Robert Stetson up the North River. Back from the river in this section, there was much fine timber, white oak, pine, hemlock, and cedar, of heavier growth than that nearer the shore. Cornet Stetson and others built two mills in this remote

section, one at Nanemackeuitt, and another on the Third Herring Brook. For the latter mill they flowed a large section known as "Old Pond." The site of this mill was a little to the north of the bridge, on Tiffany Road (East Street), where it is said traces of the old dam were found, near the residence of the late Samuel Tolman, the old home of Maj. Nathaniel Winslow, built by John Bryant, 3d, about 1700. This mill was burned by the Indians in the raid of 1676, and never rebuilt; the dam was destroyed, and the lands flowed to form the pond were soon after divided amongst the proprietors of the town. For an account of the other mill built by the Cornet, see article on Cornet Robert Stetson, in this book.

There was great need of a grist-mill in this section, and in 1673 the town offered a premium of "thirty acres of land to anyone who, within six months, should erect a grist-mill on the Third Herring Brook, and engage to tend the mill for fourteen years." Charles Stockbridge, of Greenbush, accepted the proposals, then changed his mind somewhat, and agreed to accept ten acres only, if he be allowed to place his mill on the Cornet's dam. The mill was not built, for the following year he decided to accept the original offer, and build a grist-mill a half mile further down the brook. When Stockbridge died, in 1684, both grist and saw mills had been built, and were set off to his sons, Charles, Jr., and Thomas. The former received one-half the corn mill, and three-fourths the sawmill; the latter one-half the corn mill, and one-fourth the sawmill.

Charles Stockbridge seems to have been the millwright *par excellence* in the colony, for in 1683 the town of Plymouth sent for him to rebuild the old Jenny mill on Town Brook, which had apparently been improperly built or conducted, in as much as Plymouth was "greatly damnified" by its condition on that date.

In 1692, Thomas Stockbridge sold his interest in the corn mill to John Bryant, 3d (whose widow was the

second wife of Cornet Stetson) and Sergeant Samuel Stetson, whose son Jonah inherited it, and it became known for several generations as "Jonah's mill," his son Jonah, Jr., succeeding his father. It was used as a grist-mill until after 1850.

The larger interest in the sawmill remained in the Stockbridge family. Charles, Jr.'s, daughter, Remembrance, married Recompense Tiffany, and the mill began to be known as the "Tiffany mill," and the pond as "Tiffany's pond." The highway once called Mill Street has of late years been re-named Tiffany Road.

Capt. Zephaniah Talbot married Agnes Salmond, a granddaughter of Rev. Samuel Baldwin. With his brothers-in-law, William and John Salmond, he began the manufacture of tacks on or near the site of the Tiffany mill. In 1838, their brother Samuel acquired the business, and in 1859, the enterprise was carried on under the firm name of Samuel Salmond & Son, said son being his son-in-law, Edmund Q. Sylvester. Sylvester's heirs now continue it under the same name.

The Curtis mills on the Third Herring Brook were built in part as early as 1688, when Benjamin Curtis built a sawmill, and later a grist-mill. The latter has been in use until within a decade, the only one for miles around. They were known at one time as the Clap & Curtis mills, Constant Clap having been part owner. At the time of the Revolution, they were owned by Capt. Calvin Curtis, whose name as an officer is often found on the Revolutionary Rolls and Town Records of Hanover. His son, Capt. Edward, inherited them, and they have descended through daughters in the family line to the present time, known variously as Jefferson Gardner's and Samuel Church's mills.

John Bryant, Jr., built a sawmill on the Second Herring Brook as early as 1690. It was nearer the mouth of the brook than the mill owned by Joseph F. Merritt,

supposed to have been built by Hawke Cushing. John Bryant, Sr.'s, house stood ten rods east of the present mill, where the remains of an old orchard can be seen. Soon after building the sawmill, John, Jr., built a grist-mill on the brook, nearly in front of his father's house, and at a later period is said to have built another on or near the site of Torrey's mill. The first grist-mill built by him was owned by the Sylvesters for two or three generations — Elisha, Israel, Thomas, and Thomas, Jr.

Hawke Cushing was a carpenter and builder. The mill that he is said to have built after his purchase of the Dea. Thomas Bryant estate, about 1769, was operated by his brother, Pickles Cushing, and a generation later by Pickles, Jr., and Dea. Thomas, son of Hawke.

Joseph Merritt, 2d, purchased the mill from Josiah Cushing, son of Dea. Thomas, and used it to get out the lumber for the last vessel built on North River, the *Helen M. Foster*, named for his second wife. At this same period it was turning out large quantities of box boards for the local box factories. Merritt sold the mill to David W. Turner, who operated it, until his death, in connection with his steam mill near by. William D. Turner, son of David, sold it a few years ago to Joseph Foster Merritt, son of Joseph, its former owner.

In 1691-92, Mordecai Lincoln built the Lincoln mills on Bound Brook—both grist and saw mills. Although upon the Cohasset side of the brook, these mills ground and sawed their full share of Scituate's products. Lincoln owned two other mills on the same brook, one on the border of what has lately been called Echo Lake, near the Morris icehouse, the other in the Beechwood district. In times of drought, Lincoln run the upper mill on Mondays and Tuesdays; the middle pond then being full, he ground there on Wednesdays and Thursdays; while Fridays and Saturdays Lincoln's lower mills utilized the waters twice before made use of—a most ingenious and practical method of conservation.

In 1720, a wind grist-mill stood a little south of the Unitarian Church in South Scituate Village, believed to have been built by Zebulon Sylvester. A second one was later erected on the same spot, but was discontinued as a mill before 1800. The building was afterward used as a horse-shed, and taken down when the church was built, in 1830. The site of this mill has been removed in part, during the last half-century, by the removal of gravel from the hill in the Town Field, once owned by Warren Sylvester, a grandson of Zebulon.

Most accounts agree that the Jacobs mills, at Assinippi, were built by the brothers, Joshua and Dr. Joseph Jacobs, sons of David of Greenbush, about 1730. They were probably built a little earlier, for the General Court passed an Act of Incorporation for the new town of Hanover in 1727, and in it "David Jacobs' sawmill dam" was mentioned. Both grist and saw mills were built, the grist-mill on the westerly, and the sawmill on the easterly, flume. For a period of one hundred and ninety years they have remained in the family possession, the last owner having been Dr. Henry Barton Jacobs, of Baltimore. The grist-mill was abandoned many years ago, and the structure removed, while the old sawmill was burned on July 4th, 1920. Jacobs Pond, with its island near the eastern shore, is one of the beauty spots of Assinippi.

Samuel Stockbridge, son of Charles, of Greenbush, settled at Mt. Blue in 1703. His son Samuel was a Revolutionary soldier, and captain of one of the Scituate companies. In 1752, in company with James Bowker and Josiah Litchfield, he purchased land on Groundsell Brook, and built a sawmill, of which Stockbridge owned one half, and Bowker and Litchfield the other. James Bowker removed to Georgetown, Me., in 1764, and sold his share to Stockbridge, upon whose death it was inherited by his son James, also a soldier in

the Revolution. James' heirs were Hosea, Jacob, and Joseph, the latter becoming owner of the mill by inheritance, and by gift from his uncles. They passed through several hands until purchased by Joseph Hackett, who, with his son Wallace, did a flourishing business there about 1898. The last owners were the Richardson brothers.

The Stockbridges, James, John, Hosea, and Jacob, later built a shingle mill on the same brook in the Mt. Hope section. It was burned, and was rebuilt with Perez Turner as one of the partners. This mill was sold to Isaac Pratt, who abandoned it. Charles Hackett purchased the site, and built another shingle mill, which was burned in 1914.

In 1746, John Stetson received permission from the town to erect a mill at the Harbor, by flowing "any part of the landing-place near Mr. Ensign Otis' dwelling house, so long as he or his heirs should keep up the grist-mill." This was a tide mill, and its builder, John Stetson, lived on the Wanton estate, on North River. In the great snowstorm of November, 1786, this Stetson mill was swept across the marshes to the Marshfield shore, in like manner as the cottages on the Sand Hills beach, in the storm of 1898.

In 1752, Joseph Tilden conveyed land to Elisha Peirce for a mill site, on the so-called Musquashcut "river," "at a place called Peirce's Bilding Yard," above the Stepping Stones, and near the old "swimmin' hole." It was a tide mill, and in 1754-55 Samuel Holbrook brought suit against Elisha Peirce for damages to his land, caused by the mill. In 1824, another Elisha Peirce conveys to Calvin Peirce the "mill lot," with no mention of a mill then standing, but one is remembered to have been there as late as 1800.

In 1787, Amasa Bailey was granted a right by the town to erect a mill on the "Gulf." Was this mill ever built?

Elijah Turner was granted leave by the town, in 1791, to flow a part of the road near John Hatch's, to furnish water power for a grist-mill.

NOTE: John Hatch's house was the old house on the south side of White Oak Plain that belonged to the Lemuel Turner estate, occupied for many years by an employee of the Turners by the name of Green.

Elijah Turner built his grist-mill on Margaret's Brook, south of his dwelling house, that of his grandson, the late Miles S. Turner. Traces of the old dam can still be found near the boundary line between his property and that of Joseph C. Otis, on Pleasant Street. Remains of the old bridge, and the cartway leading from the road to the mill, are traceable south of the old cellar of the Elijah Turner house, burned in the late 90's. The mill was last used in 1827.

About this same period, Galen Damon, Sr., built both saw and grist mill on a branch of the First Herring Brook; the sawmill reached by a cartway off Summer Street, the grist-mill, most conveniently, from the road leading from James Briggs' to Mungo's Corner. The grist-mill was in ruins many years ago. The sawmill was operated by his son, Galen, Jr., and the latter's son, Charles, after whose death it was purchased by Benjamin P. Foster and Charles A. Litchfield.

The truth of the tradition that John Bryant, Jr., built a grist-mill on the site of the Torrey mill has never been questioned. The first sawmill there was built by Lemuel Turner before 1800. Samuel Adams Turner told his son John that he remembered, as a small boy, seeing the new sluice-way dug for "Lem" Turner's new mill. Samuel was born in 1792. This mill was operated by Lemuel and his son Albion. The latter's wife was

Vesta Torrey, and after her husband's death it passed into the possession of her brothers, David, Jr., and Willard, who began to make trunks and boxes there. In the middle 70's the old mill was burned, and David, the elder brother, took over the business, using a new factory on River Street. He rebuilt the sawmill to use in connection with it, putting in new and heavier machinery. After the death of David, in 1884, his brother, Everett Torrey, took over the old mill. Having no children, this property was given in his will to his nephews, Howard C. and George E. Torrey, and is still owned by them.

A tide mill that could be used in all seasons was a great convenience, and the loss of the old Stetson tide mill, in 1786, was keenly felt until 1802, when Jesse Dunbar built another on or near the location of the old mill.

The first deed on record at Plymouth for the transfer of the property is in 1811, when it was deeded to Howland and Edwin Otis. In connection with the grain mill, they used the old Melzar Turner shipyard for a lumber yard until after 1850. Philip Reynolds came from Stoughton, and, with William Smith, used the mill as a sash and window blind factory. Reynolds removed to Brockton to manufacture organs and melodeons, and Smith re-established a grain business in the old mill. This sign hung in Smith's mill for many years: "Heaven helps those who help themselves, but Heaven help you if you are caught helping yourselves here."

Charles Cottle carried on the grain business until 1867, when it was purchased by Augustus Cole and D. Sanford Jenkins, and conducted by them for some years. John E. O. Prouty continued the business until around 1890. The old mill building was then moved, and used by George Brown in his livery business.

In 1817, John Clap built a sawmill upon the Third Herring Brook near his residence, a short distance up

the stream from the old Curtis mill. It was used by him and his son John until the latter's death.

A nail mill was built on the First Herring Brook, before 1830, by Samuel Adams Turner and Lemuel Jacobs. Isaac Harrub made tacks and nails at this mill in Greenbush, and also in Dea. Ambrose Magoon's mill in the Two Mile. A Mr. Bisbee, probably from Bridgewater, manufactured trowels at the Harrub mill, which he later sold to Judge Keith of the Probate Court, who made shingles there. Charles Walker purchased the mill later and manufactured lobster pots, until he sold it to the Boston Rubber Cement Co., its present owners. Walker had previously made lobster pots in a steam mill on Winter Street, and after selling the Harrub mill, built the one now used by his son near the railroad at Greenbush.

Samuel Adams Turner built a shingle mill upon the east branch of the Second Herring Brook in 1831. In addition to the shingle machinery, his son, John Turner, put in machines for manufacturing lobster pots, and with his son, J. Franklin, carried on a considerable business for some years, supplying, in large part, the lobstermen along the shore from Hull to White's Ferry. This was an earlier industry than Walker's, and the only other local manufacturers for some years were at Cohasset Cove.

In 1842, Joseph Tolman built a sawmill on a small stream that forms the northern boundary of the ancient Cornet Stetson farm. It stood there in the late 60's, but was later abandoned.

It will be noted that the sawmills of the town were largely in the southern and western sections, from which the shipbuilders of the North River got most of the lumber for their vessels, until those great storms, at

the beginning of the nineteenth century, destroyed much of the remaining large growth. The mills were busy places during the ship-building days. Through the winter months the hum of the big saws could be heard for long distances. The large logs, often two or three feet in diameter, were drawn to the mills over the snow by several yokes of oxen, sometimes with a pair of steers in the lead, now an unusual sight for many years past.

Before 1850, the making of trunks and boxes was carried on to a considerable extent in South Scituate, continuing until after 1880. John Jones, who lived on Jones Hill, near Assinippi, was the pioneer in this business in Plymouth County, it is stated. David Torrey's mill, on River Street, before mentioned, was the abandoned Universalist Church building, once standing in Duxbury, of which society the Rev. David Livermore, the husband of Mrs. Mary A. Livermore, had been a pastor. John Grose manufactured trunks and boxes on Prospect Street in a building now a dwelling house. David Turner was a later box maker at his mill before mentioned, first in the old Cushing mill, and later in a steam mill near by. The steam mill was burned in 1912, and his son, William D. Turner, soon built another, with electricity as the motive power. This mill was purchased in 1914 by Joseph F. Merritt. The output of the Turner mills was market boxes for the farmers of the adjoining towns.

After the disastrous storm of 1898, many portable mills were set up in the woodlands, remaining here until the leveled forests were cleared.

Early Poets

A LETTER yellow with age, written by Samuel Woodworth (whose father married the widow of Joseph Northey) to Joseph Northey, his foster brother, together with a quaint old portrait of Samuel Woodworth, is still treasured by the family.

The letter, written in the stilted style of long ago, is redolent of charm and affectionate friendship, the delicate flowing penmanship matched by the poetic sentiments. It is a privilege to read the precious missive and look into the face of the portrait, and to come near to Scituate's beloved poet.

He was born at Scituate Harbor in 1786, in a house then standing on the spot where Charles W. Frye's store now is. Like most enterprising country boys, he left his home at an early age to seek his fortune in the city; both his pastor and teacher had discovered marks of genius in the lad, and were wise enough to encourage and fire his imagination.

He learned the printer's trade of Benjamin Burrell, publisher of the *Columbian Sentinel*, of Boston, and became the founder of the *New York Mirror*. Always, and naturally, his thoughts took the poetic form, although a few novels came from his pen, one of which was dramatized, "The Mexican Chief." At the age of fourteen he wrote the poem "My Mother's Grave," in which he describes his early life. It contains fifty stanzas, and begins by describing the poet's birthplace:

"Beneath that roof I first inhaled the air,
Poor were my parents, hard they earned their bread,
Rich only in reputation fair,
And owned no mansion where to lay their head.

"Along yon streamlet, where the whispering reeds
And fragrant flags upon its border play,
Where through those cedars it meand'ring leads,
My infant footsteps first were taught to stray."

While living in New York, his thoughts often turned with longing to his early home; but stern necessity made

his visits of infrequent occurrence. At one time he made the trip from New York to Scituate in winter by sleigh and posthorses, on which occasion he was forced to hasten his return for fear of a sudden thaw.

One of his ballads of the heart which will live to be repeated and sung long after wiser and grander words are forgotten is "The Old Oaken Bucket." The incident of its writing is of interest: one hot day in New York, on reaching home, he remarked to his wife, "What would I not give for a drink from the old well in Scituate." "Put that in a poem," she said.

His "quiver was full" of children — ten sons and daughters were his. One of them, Selim, named for an early *nom de plume* of his father's, collected and edited his poems in two volumes; these are now out of print, but copies are carefully cherished by the Northey family.

NOTE: The present Northey farm has been in the family since 1675, when John Northey bought it of Thomas Ingham, whose wife, Mary, bewitched Mehitabel Woodworth. This was one of the two cases of witchcraft tried in the Old Colony, and Mary Ingham was acquitted by the jury.

In the old town of Scituate, corner of Kent Street and Meeting-house Lane, overlooking the harbor, stands the house where the Hon. George Lunt, of Boston and Harvard College, came to make his home at the time of the Civil War.

He was a journalist — joint editor of the *Boston Courier* with George S. Hilliard. He was a writer on religion and philosophy, and he was also the author of excellent poetry. That he was fond of his adopted town, and had a realizing care for it, is shown by the fact that he was instrumental in getting the first breakwater in Scituate. He was United States District Attorney, and a contemporary and friend of the eminent jurists and statesmen of the Anti-Slavery and Civil War period.

Mrs. Lunt's brother, the poet Dr. Thomas William Parsons, spent much time here with the Lunts when weary of the confusion of the city. He wrote constantly for the *Courier,* but some of his choicest poems were

given to friends before publishers. He won deserved fame as the "translator of Dante." He was a friend and oft-time companion of Henry W. Longfellow, and lovingly wrote of "The Old House at Sudbury." The Poet's Tale, in "Stories of the Wayside Inn," is represented as being told by him.

Mr. Lunt's daughter inherited much of her father's talent, and as the widow of Captain Meteyard, she, too, made her home here, living for some time with her people, later building a house on Meeting-house Lane, where she lived with her son, Thomas Meteyard, a well-known artist and illustrator. Her devotion to Letters and Art drew to her home many writers and painters, among them Richard Hovey, who wrote "Seaward," a loving tribute to Thomas William Parsons; and Bliss Carman, who will always be remembered by the following verses:

"Over the shoulders and slopes of the dune
I saw the white daisies go down to the sea,
A host in the sunshine, an army in June,
The people God sends us to set our heart free.

"The bobolinks rallied them up from the dell,
The orioles whistled them out of the wood;
And all of their singing was, 'Earth, it is well!'
And all of their dancing was, 'Life, thou art good!' "

Mary Louisa Foster

Early Artists

CAPTAIN THOMAS SOUTHWORTH was a descendant of Colony Treasurer Constant Southworth, one of the sons of Alice Southworth, who became the wife of Gov. William Bradford, as mentioned in Plymouth history and in the Jane Austen books.

He had married Sarah, daughter of Elisha James, in 1797, and came from Duxbury to live in Scituate in 1800. "His mansion house stood near the gate that led to the 'Block House.'" It was unfortunately burned in 1823, and was replaced by a much smaller one. Their three sons, Nathan, Thomas, and George, were the earliest Scituate artists.

Nathan was born in Scituate in 1806; he early manifested talent in drawing, and, establishing himself in Boston, ranked as one of the best in his department of art. His likenesses were characterized by accuracy in

drawing and great delicacy of execution. G. S. Hilliard, of reading-book fame, and an intimate friend of Nathan's, said: "He was a man not widely known, but his ability as an artist, and his purity of life and amiable qualities as a man, entitle him to some tribute to his memory."

He enjoyed in youth the benefit of no other education than that of the common schools of Scituate. On leaving school he began to learn the trade of house carpenter, and afterwards engaged in the business of a machinist. All through life he was remarkable for skill and neatness in handicraft work, but his spirit was that of the artist and not of the mechanic, and obeying this impulse, soon after attaining his majority he began the making of pictures.

In a few years he was established in Boston as a miniature painter. He resided there until 1848, when he visited Europe, remaining a year. After his return he painted in New York and Philadelphia for a time, but his health failed rapidly, and he withdrew from active exercise of his art and went to live in Hingham with his mother. After her death he visited Paris again, in 1857, undertaking a commission beyond his strength, that of buying works of art for patrons in America, and his illness soon assumed a serious character. He turned homeward, impelled by the desire to draw his last breath in his native air. He arrived in Boston April 25, 1858, and died in the carriage on the way to Hingham.

Nathan painted some canvases, but he excelled in portrait miniatures. The picture accompanying this article is that of Mary Louisa, daughter of Samuel Foster, the shipbuilder. She was considered very beautiful, and quite the belle of Scituate in her day. At the time of her death, at the age of eighteen, she was soon to have married Henry Bowers, Jr., a grand-nephew of Madam Hannah Cushing. Mrs. Arthur L. Power (Mary Louisa Foster Nash) bears the name of her great-aunt, and cherishes this miniature, which was painted by Nathan Southworth about 1842.

Thomas Southworth was born in Scituate about 1809, and died in 1887. He had great talent, and would have been greater than Nathan if he had continued his work, but after the death of his wife, who was Elizabeth Thaxter Davis, of Dorchester, and his son, aged six months, he lost his desire for painting. The other brother, George, who was also an artist, died in Hingham, unmarried, at the age of twenty-nine, in 1844.

Mossing

LONG before motor boats were in common use, a stranger standing on one of our cliffs at sunset, when the long shadows of twilight were deepening, would have been puzzled to see, coming slowly toward the shore, a long line of dark objects like uncanny sea monsters. Perhaps fifty might have been drifting in at one time; as they drew nearer a man could be discerned on each one, guiding it with a pole.

This was one of the far-famed mossing fleet. Low boats, all heavily laden at one end, which gave them a weird appearance.

The Irish moss, as it is called, is still one of our paying industries. Quantities grow on the rocks along the coast. It is gathered with long rakes and piled in the dories until they can hold no more. This being wholly a summer industry, the men made long days, usually starting by four o'clock in the morning, at which hour city sojourners were often wakened by cheery halloos or a matin snatch of song, as the men lazily poled far out into the water, knowing just where they could find their day's haul.

"On Scituate sands, what busy hands
In summer's prime we see;
Not idle boats, those little floats,
But beds of industry." *

Any time during the season the process of drying and bleaching the moss may be seen on Peggotty and Jericho Beaches. First the white sand is made smooth and free from stones above the tide line, then the moss, or "carrageen," as the gatherers call it, is spread out in square patches, looking like a veritable sea garden with its dashes of color. When first brought in it is dark green, later a reddish purple, and lastly a creamy white, dried until brittle and ready for the market. An added touch to this sea garden is the sight of women and children, with

* Poem by Mrs. George Lunt.

browned, bare feet, turning the moss with rakes over and over in the sunshine or pouring on the sea water, which hastens the bleaching process.

The moss is used in the manufacture of cloth, paper, straw hats, gelatine for eating, and in breweries. However, as it is becoming more scarce, and higher priced, cheap chemicals are now often substituted.

This industry was carried on more extensively in Scituate and one place on the California Coast than anywhere else in the United States. The business is almost wholly in the hands of the Irish, and was, in fact, the thing which first attracted them to the town years ago. They have grown into a large community, and many have become prosperous citizens.

At first each man worked for himself, and had a little spot on the beach near his home where he washed and dried his moss, then packed it into barrels, awaiting a buyer who came at stated intervals to secure the harvest. Much anxiety attended the buying, for the lucky sale of the season's moss meant food and comfort for the winter, when there was no work in mossing.

"So Heaven provides from out these tides
The poor man's home to bless,
While busy hands on Scituate sands
The 'carrageen' may dress." *

* Poem by Mrs. George Lunt.

The Past Geography of Scituate, Massachusetts

THE very name of Scituate has a geographical flavor, having been named from Satuit Brook. The story of her past geography is written in the gravel hills and harbor muds and in the beaches and cliffs of her shore. It is a difficult problem to trace their genealogy, and the story reads like a miracle. We change the surface of our town a little by dredging our channels, by leveling our rolling hills, and by clearing the forests; but these are as atoms when compared with the changes that took place before the advent of the white man or the Indian.

It takes a big stretch of the imagination to think of our peaceful waters once witnessing volcanoes pouring out streams of glowing lava, and darkening the sky with clouds of ashes. The vestiges of these ancient mountains have nearly disappeared. Their vast bulk of material has long since been swept away by erosion. It is fair to infer that, if these elevations existed, they were sculptured by waves as powerful as those of today; and that the same kind of winds and rains, and the same kind of streams wore them down to their present base. The granite ledges of our "stern and rock-bound coast" are all that remain to suggest these burning mountains.

These coarse granite headlands, our oldest rocks, were formed in the deepest-seated portions of the volcanoes, where the process of cooling was extremely slow and the various minerals had time to sort themselves and crystallize. Granite is the only rock of economic importance in the town; it has been quarried to a slight extent near Osher Rocks. In some places the rock is too fissured for building purposes, and cost of transportation, two miles to the railroad station, is also a disadvantage. After all, there is greater wealth in keeping these gems of scenery for all time than in transforming them into gold and silver for the benefit of a generation.

GRANITE HEADLAND, SHOWING DARKER DYKE ROCK, AT "GLADES"

During these earlier geologic ages molten rock squeezed into clefts of the granite, forming dikes, such as are seen at either end of the North Scituate Beach, where it is easily recognized by its dark green or black color.

The Scituates differ from the Weymouths, Braintree, and Quincy, in that most of our ledges are covered with gravel. In driving from the inland toward the beach, the ledges do not appear on the surface until one reaches Conihasset Hall. The hall is aptly named from the old Indian word "Quonahassett," as meaning a "long place of rocks." Then comes Booth Hill, a vast accumulation of gravel, the bottom-rock not cropping out again until one crosses the railroad. Farther on, the ledges become a common part of the landscape, some of the houses being literally "built upon a rock." Wherever these bed rocks are able to peek above the gravel, we get a vision of ancestral peaks.

The geologic epoch that has had the greatest effect upon our life is the glacial period. It is estimated that between five and ten thousand years ago a great ice sheet covered the northeastern part of North America as far

south as the Ohio River. This episode has been deciphered from the action of living glaciers in the polar regions and in the mountains. The ice sheet in Greenland is carrying rocks of all sizes and depositing them without sorting. This material, varying in size from large boulders to fine clay, is called "till" or "drift." The huge ice mass grinds off the rotten part of the ledges, over which it passes, sometimes leaving parallel scratches. As the load is gathered from a wide area, it consists of many kinds of pebbles, which have been crushed into angular fragments, whose surfaces have been scratched. The only agent that is doing that sort of thing today is the glacier. It is undoubtedly true that the glacier was the agent that caused the same kind of a formation in the past.

A section of any of our hills shows them to be made of gravel and boulders thrown together in a helter-skelter fashion, quite unlike the systematic way in which the North River deposits sand in one place and carries clay to another.

To think that one of these heights, Colman Hills, has been purchased for its gravel, and that the material is sorted and shipped to Boston, New York, and other ports! The tearing down of these hills by man for reasons of industrial pursuit should be a sounding note to the inhabitants that we have some gravel hills marred by man which are not only monuments of the glacial period but teeming with beauty and historic memories.

The stones of the Scituate drift are of many kinds. These may be more easily studied at the foot of one of the four cliffs, where they have been unearthed and cleaned by the waves. Here one finds many puddingstones (conglomerate) and greenish boulders (melaphyre). Since there are no cliffs from which these rocks could have broken, they must have been brought there. We do not see the tide bringing in such boulders today, and do not believe that they were brought in any unusual way in the past. The only known force that could have

conveyed them was the ice. If this is true, we must search in a northerly direction to find the original home from which these weighty objects were plucked; we find such ledges at Nantasket. One cannot help noticing that these boulders become larger as one approaches Atlantic Hill. This is as one would expect; for the glacier would grind its freight to a smaller size the farther it was carried. It is unusual for us to think of the soil of our gardens as representing the relics of high mountains, worn by winds and storms, and later mixed by a great glacier; but such is affirmed by a study of the features of the earth.

Hatchet Rock

The largest boulders are granite, which is the most common rock of the group immediately north. Hatchet Rock, on the summit of Booth's Hill, is a typical illustration.

This is an unusually regular boulder, and the notch in the ledge, from which it was plucked, should be easily recognized. This is a modern problem for Boy Scouts, as exciting as trailing wild game by the pioneers. Toad

Rock, on the estate of Silas Peirce, at Egypt, is a diorite boulder, resting on drift material. In sharp contrast to these resistant boulders, is the absence of slate rocks. The underlying material of the Hull peninsula, Slate Island, in Hingham Harbor, and other islands in the Boston Harbor, must have contributed a large amount of slate to the glacier, but the character of the rock allowed it to be ground up by the ice sheet. Only traces of slate are therefore found in the gravel hills.

Most of the hills in Scituate are smooth and rounded, composed of gravel, with their long axes running from northwest to southeast, which would indicate that the glacier moved out to sea in that direction. These hills (drumlins) are in direct contrast to the irregular ledge hills, which are made up of hard, resistant rock. The largest drumlin is Prospect Hill, the highest hill in Plymouth County, 218 feet in altitude. One obtains grand views from the summits of these hills. They are usually pasture lands, and are at present becoming covered with a young growth of white pine and juniper, commonly called "savin" or "red cedar."

Another noticeable feature of the landscape is the long ridges (kames), such as extend along the northerly shore of Accord Pond. It is said that these hills were often Indian trails, and frequently old cart-paths are faintly hinted by the nearly filled grooves made long ago by farm wagons.

Among other records of the ice epoch should be mentioned the evidences shown by the granite ledges. The surface of the rocks has been ground smooth, in some places almost polished. The residual soil and all rotten débris, which is weathered from a rock remaining in place for an indefinite period, has been planed away. Oftentimes the ice etched parallel lines, using its pebbles for tools. Such striæ may be seen on the ledges in the glades. The direction of these scratches is practically the same as the long axes of the drumlins. Wind and water cannot do these things; to find such an action going on we must

visit a glacier. The granite ledges then form a diary, where the glacier wrote a record, in the presence of which we cannot doubt that Scituate was once over-ridden by vast sheets of ice.

All of our natural ponds are due to the invasion of the glacier. The hollows in which these formations occur were caused by the melting of huge icebergs or by the deposition of gravel in the pathway of streams. There are very few natural ponds in this region. Black Pond and Accord Pond are good examples. The artificial ponds — Torrey's, Hackett's, Assinippi, Old Oaken Bucket, etc.—were made by placing artificial dams in the pathway of streams. At each one of these ponds are sawmills, old and decrepit, but plodding along with an infirm manner. The shallow basins are ponds only in winter, becoming meadows in summer, where hay, and occasionally cranberries, are harvested. The Old Oaken Bucket Pond is now being utilized by the Scituate Water Company.

The age following the melting of the ice sheet may be spoken of as the post-glacial or present period, and since these changes are now going on they are easier to interpret. The modern shore has developed cliffs, beaches, and marshes; the plants and animals which were driven southward by the glacier migrated north again. Most recent of all came man. As to the first human of the region we have no evidence — there are no human relics, no stone tools, no ancient hearths, if there were any the glacier completely erased them. We simply know that the early settlers found the Indians.

The work of the waves may be divided into three steps: the erosion of the hills, the carrying away of the fine material, and the building of the beaches.

The dash of the waves is more effective in wearing away the gravel of the North River Cliffs than the resistant rocks of North Scituate. The waves do not reach the higher portions of the cliffs, but undermine the upper masses of soil, causing them to fall to the base.

The recession coast line has retreated rapidly up to recent years; to avoid this breakwaters have later been built. One can reason out the original form and size of the drumlins by continuing the uniform curve of the crest of the hill seaward or by observing the boulders which have dropped down as they were undermined. The steep slopes, of course, are always on the seaward side; landward the slope is gentle. These drumlin hills have been considerably reduced by the waves and tides, and in some places, as the Fourth Cliff, have almost disappeared.

The material eroded from the cliffs is transported by the alongshore currents and the undertow. The boulders, being too heavy for even the strongest waves to carry, remain where they fall. The coarse material, gravel and sand, is rolled along the shore to form beaches, and the fine clay soil is carried into the still, deep water.

The waves deposit their load in systematic fashion. The material is not carried into the bays, but builds up a beach across the mouth, as the "Sand Hills," which are creeping across Scituate Harbor. In this state of development it is a spit. If the spit builds across the bay, shutting it off as a lagoon, the deposit becomes a bar. The completion of the bar is often prevented by the tidal currents. The building of jetties at the mouth of the harbor causes a swift current which scours out the channel and allows vessels to come in to the docks.

When the ponds are completed by the barriers shutting off the bays from the open water, they tend to fill up with sediment which is washed in by the rain and by streams. Here and there water-plants gain a foothold, and in course of time the shallow lagoon becomes a marsh.

The shore line is now fairly well straightened, and the waves begin to drive back the cliffs, beach, and marsh. Near the mouth of the North River pieces of the marsh are found near the low tide line, showing that the marsh was once a great deal larger and that the pebbly beach is being driven back onto it. A marsh protruding

beneath a beach may also be seen at the point from which the picture of the dike rock was taken.

The history of the region near the mouth of the North River may therefore be summed up as follows: the hills or drumlins were deposited by the glacier in the form of islands. The sea made great inroads upon the drumlins, making steep cliffs, the eroded material connecting the islands by means of beaches. In the quiet waters back of the beaches and the cliffed drumlins a great deal of sediment was deposited. This accumulation allowed vegetation to develop marshes. The inner edges of the marshes, then, indicate the former shore line, and the great extent of the marshes shows how much the water area has been reduced.

The latest change of note was the forming of the new mouth to the North River, which was predicted by Deane, in 1831, when he wrote: "The beach between the third and fourth cliff is composed of sand and pebbles, and resists the attrition of the tides more than the cliffs; yet it is slowly wasting, and the river probably will eventually find its outlet between those cliffs." In the big gale of November 27, 1898, a large tidal wave broke through the beach north of the Fourth Cliff. The river now empties into the ocean at this place, instead of continuing its former course irregularly parallel to the old mouth, miles to the south. The tidal-flats of the river, where once the farmers cut their "salt-hay," are now mud-flats yielding clams. These changes took place "before our very eyes," and help us to conceive the changes of the past.

Memorable Storms

REFERENCES to storms that have been destructive in Scituate have been found in old diaries, almanacs, and documents. There are records of hurricanes, in 1635 and 1638, unroofing houses and uprooting trees. There was the great snowstorm of November, 1786, when John Stetson's tide mill at the Harbor was swept over the marshes to the James Turner farm.

The great storm of 1851 was of especial fury along the coast from Portland to New York. Spring had opened and the season for bad storms had passed, but for several days before Monday, April 14, the wind had been blowing strongly from the east. On that day it shifted to the northeast, and with it came the storm that had been brewing. All day Tuesday the gale continued, and by Thursday night it had become violent, with very high tide, flooding wharves, cellars, and streets.

On Thursday the storm began to abate, but with the wind still in the northeast. Friday and Saturday the storm continued, but on Sunday the sun shone brightly, the first time for ten days. Scituate Harbor had been damaged to the extent of $5,000, and the oldest inhabitant said the tide had not been as high since Wednesday, December 16, 1786, a period of sixty-five years. The greatest damage was along the wharves and the lumber yard of Howland & Edwin Otis, who carried on the business at the old mill and shipyard. Front and Kent Streets were flooded and filled with wreckage from the lumber yard, which was carried by the wind and tide to the farms of Michael Welch and Samuel Turner, destroying walls and fences on its way.

The Marshfield packet, which had just put into the harbor for safety broke her moorings and went ashore on Webb's Island. All this damage, although considerable, was dwarfed by the calamity that on Thursday

began to be noised along the shore. The new Minot's Ledge Lighthouse, built only two years before, had been completely carried away, taking with it two assistant keepers, Joseph Antoine and Joseph Wilson. The structure was built upon nine iron piles, ten inches in diameter at the base, tapering to four or five inches at the top, braced and counterbraced in various directions. On the five-ton cap the lighthouse and the keeper's house were placed. It was first lighted January 1, 1850, for the superintendent of the construction company recommended that no apparatus or keeper be installed until it had withstood the storms of one winter.

After passing one season in the lighthouse, with two assistants, the keeper, Isaac Dunham, of West Bridgewater, became convinced that the structure was not safe, and gave notice to the government to that effect. No notice being taken of his warning, he resigned in October, 1850, and the second keeper, John W. Bennett, was appointed. He was a man of courage and felt no uncertainty at first, but by the time he had experienced the November gales, he, too, called for an investigation. Made upon a fair day, the engineers reported it equal to "standing the strain of any storm without danger." The storms of the following December and January were of great fury, and Keeper Bennett and his assistants realized their perilous position. Although somewhat damaged, it weathered the gales; and Capt. Swift, the chief construction engineer, warmly defended the structure in *Appleton's Mechanics Magazine* of February, 1851, in these words: "This severe test must tend to establish the entire sufficiency of this material (iron) for the purpose of lighthouse structures, even in the most exposed situation, when put together with proper care."

Although Bennett's experience of the light swaying two feet from side to side in the storms of December and January had made him fearful, yet the period of bad storms having passed, he probably thought himself secure for some months to come.

On Friday, April 11, he was called to Boston to see about the purchase of a boat for the lighthouse, leaving his assistants in charge. Returning on Saturday, he found the sea too heavy to get to the light, and went to his home at Whitehead, Cohasset. Sunday and Monday the same conditions prevailed, and when the storm broke on Tuesday, he could only watch and await developments.

The lighthouse was seen to be standing at 3.30 P. M. on Wednesday, and in the evening the light was burning as late as 11 P. M., with the fog bell tolling rapidly. The next morning the shore was strewn with wreckage for miles, and no vestige of the structure was visible, while immense waves tumbled over the ledge where it had been. The body of Antoine was found at Nantasket soon after the storm, and later that of Wilson was discovered in a cleft of Gull Rock off the Glades.*

In clearing the wreck of the ill-fated Minot's Light the bell, said to have been cast by Paul Revere's son, was recovered from beneath the ocean waves and disposed of as junk. It was purchased, however, for use on a factory at Turner, Me., and it was there until the burning of the mill in September, 1905. At that time the owner, Mr. Faulkner, lost his life, and the bell that had passed through storm, flood, and fire was, after half a century of service, put out of commission. It was recast with some added metal, and was presented, by Mr. Faulkner's daughter, Mrs. Anna Chase, to the Baptist Church of Bryant's Pond, Me., in 1906, and is now in use in the steeple of that church. It bears this inscription:

THIS BELL IS GIVEN TO THE BRYANT'S POND
BAPTIST CHURCH, IN LOVING MEMORY OF
FRANCIS T. FAULKNER.

THE TURNER WOOLEN MILLS BELL,
PREVIOUSLY ON MINOT'S LEDGE LIGHTHOUSE,
IS INCORPORATED HEREIN. 1906.

Another effect of the storm of April, 1851, was the tearing away of the beach between the ocean and

* Arranged from account written by S. F. Wilkins.

Musquashcut Pond, making an opening forty feet wide through which the tides ebbed and flowed, called the "Gully." This prevented crossing the beach between Egypt and North Scituate with carts or carriages. It was so deep that the fishermen went into the pond in their boats. It, however, filled in gradually, but a large lot of sand had been carried into the pond, which formed flats, acres in extent, on which beach grass grows today. The old people called it the "Guzzle."

The Great Storm of 1898

THIS storm, in which the S. S. *Portland* was lost, was a disastrous one for Scituate. Saturday, November 26, dawned clear and sunny, but soon showed indications of a storm, which increased during the night, and Sunday morning the snow was so blinding that nothing could be seen.

Monday, again all was bright and clear, but what a sight greeted the eye. The camps and cottages at the section of the Sand Hills toward Cedar Point had gone down like card houses, thrown on their sides, on end, and bottom up on the marsh. The wreckage was carried across the harbor and piled up in great confusion on the Welch farm, once James Turner's, a mile and a half away.

The pilot boat *Columbia* was driven high upon the sands with the wrecks of cottages all around her; nine lives were lost at the Sand Hills, eight on the pilot boat, and one, a woman, was drowned in trying to get away from her cottage.

At North Scituate, on Stony Beach, the full force of the storm was felt, every house being moved and more or less wrecked, and the breakwater that had stood the test of time was obliterated. South of the Greenbush Station the bridge and the tracks were badly damaged, all traffic below there being by way of Kingston and Whitman for a time. On North River, just inside the

"shingle" beach connecting Third and Fourth Cliffs, were many gunning camps on the low marsh islands; several of these were occupied, as the wild duck had been plentiful that season. Some of the gunners managed to escape, but the Henderson camp was swept away, and four young men from Norwell lost their lives. The North River had made for itself a new mouth three miles above the old one, as had long been predicted.

The loss to the mossers was large, barrels and barrels of moss were swept away — likewise their boats and gear. Thousands of dollars' worth of trees were mown down in a day by the gale in various sections of South Scituate, and for several years the busy hum of the steam sawmills and the "patois" of the Canadian choppers were common sounds heard in driving along the highways.

Three Days After Great Storm of 1898

The Humane Society of Massachusetts

THE HUMANE SOCIETY OF MASSACHUSETTS was organized in Boston in 1785, and incorporated in 1791 by philanthropic men. It was formed for the purpose of relieving the distress of its fellow men, and was the pioneer in the work of life saving. Through its means many lives and much property have been preserved.

The seal of the society represents the rescue of Moses by the daughter of Pharaoh, with the motto, "I drew him out of the water."

Conditions have changed, and the United States Government Stations are now doing most of the work formerly done by the Humane Society. The houses are still kept fully equipped, and in any case of need or emergency a volunteer crew is quickly formed, and no lack of bravery is seen. Awards are made to any citizen of Massachusetts who, under any circumstances of peril, shall save or attempt to save the life of any person.

There are other places besides the shore where the lives of persons are endangered, and each year the society increases the number of life-saving buoys, small boats, and ladders where swimming or skating accidents are likely to happen.

The first house built and sustained in Scituate for the use of shipwrecked men was called Scituate Charity House, and was on the Fourth Cliff. This was provided with simple furniture, food, clothing, utensils, and means for making light and fire, so that if any were cast ashore at this spot in storm and cold, he might not perish.

Wrecks on Scituate's Shore

"THEY that go down to the sea in ships, that do business on great waters," have many experiences of suffering and peril. Many a gallant ship has met her fate off these rocky shores — how many can never be known. The earliest wreck recorded as upon the Scituate shore was on December 16, 1693, when Capt. Anthony Collamore was wrecked on the ledge off North Scituate Beach, since known as Collamore's Ledge.

In November, 1807, the ship *Cordelia* struck on Long Ledge and went to pieces, but the crew was saved. The vessel was from China, loaded with silks, tea, and fancy articles. She was built by Jonathan Sampson in 1805, at the North River Bridge Yard, and named for the builder's daughter. Captain Dorr, her captain, had had a set of china made abroad, each piece marked with a gilt D. A tureen cover was the only piece that was saved.

May 7, 1820. Ship *Roxana* went ashore off Scituate, a total loss, but all lives were saved.

January 19, 1824. In a northeast snowstorm the brig *Federal George* was wrecked off Scituate. Crew saved, but vessel lost.

February 1, 1830. The schooner *Champion*, of New York, was driven ashore. About this time a schooner with a cargo of grindstones from Nova Scotia was wrecked under the Fourth Cliff.

February 1, 1831. Schooner *Edward* went ashore a mile west of Scituate Light.

January, 1834. Schooner *Barb*, from Halifax to Boston, sunk near Scituate.

April, 1834. Brig. *Attila*, from Rio to Boston, ashore on the rocks near Scituate.

November, 1834. Schooner *Sir H. Douglas*, from Windsor, N. S., for Boston, ashore on Scituate Beach.

January, 1835. Brig. *Francis*, from St. Marks to Boston, ashore at Scituate Bar.

February, 1837. Schooner *Spencer*, a total loss on Scituate Beach.

1838. The schooner *Dispatch*, laden with coal from Pictou, drifted down past the harbor in a driving snowstorm sometime in the winter of 1838. She was finally cast ashore on Fourth Cliff, and the captain, with his wife and four children, managed to get to land. There were two barns on the cliff at that time, but the family of John Hyland was living in one of them. These poor frostbitten refugees found shelter in the other barn, not knowing that anyone was near. At dawn one of the sons made his way to Joseph Colman's house and told his story. No time was lost in taking the people to comfortable quarters.

The same year the *Sidney*, a schooner from Brewer, Me., laden with planks, came ashore between Third and Fourth Cliffs.

There were three dreadful storms and gales in December, 1839. On the coast of Massachusetts alone one hundred and fifty vessels were cast ashore in a more or less damaged condition. Many foundered at sea. The first gale began on Saturday night, December 14, and a violent snowstorm raged till Monday. Many wrecks occurred, and the whole eastern coast was a scene of devastation. On Sunday, December 22, a second storm, called a hurricane, lasted two days, and caused great havoc amongst the shipping. The third of these great gales came on Friday, December 27, causing a tidal wave along the shore; the wharves suffered greatly.

November, 1840. Schooner *Delaware* stranded on Scituate Beach, having mistaken Scituate Light for Boston Light. This mistake was not unusual, and was the reason Scituate Light was discontinued in 1860. The following December the schooner *Perse* ran ashore, having made the same mistake.

October, 1841. The schooner *Maine* was wrecked on Scituate rocks, and in November, same year, the brig *Constantia* was lost near the cliffs.

February 17, 1844. Brig *Bordeaux*, from New Orleans to Boston, came ashore at Long Beach. Crew saved, and later the brig was got off. The cargo was molasses.

May, 1844. A schooner was dashed to pieces on Long Beach. Crew saved. Cargo of flour and potash was lost.

January, 1845. A barque from Rio Janeiro to Boston, with a cargo of coffee, was completely wrecked on Cedar Point.

In October of the same year, a schooner from Nova Scotia, laden with charcoal and coffee, was a total loss on Third Cliff. The *Maine*, a fishing schooner of sixty tons, sailed for a bay fishing trip with Capt. Joshua Litchfield, of Scituate, as Master; with him were ten sailors of Scituate and Cohasset. They stopped for the night of August 16, 1846, at anchor in the Bay, with a high wind blowing and clouds of fog around. Suddenly there was a crash, and the big steamship *Hibernia*, of the Cunard line, struck the schooner, which was dashed into fragments in a minute. The crew of the *Maine* were swept away, and it is remarkable that any of them lived to tell the tale. There were five survivors, and they met once more, fifty-eight years afterwards, June 11, 1904, to live over again the story of their wonderful escape.

November, 1846. A schooner from Maine, loaded with lumber, was wrecked on Third Cliff. Crew saved.

December 17, 1846. A brig from the West Indies, laden with sugar and molasses, was wrecked on Gull Ledge. Crew saved.

The ship *Dublin*, loaded with cotton, got into trouble on Long Beach in February, 1847, and got out of it again, with little harm done.

March 29, 1847. Brig. *Maria* ashore on Hummock Beach.

March 10, 1848. The barque *Frances Burr*, built on North River, probably at the Wanton yard, bound to Boston from Palermo, with a cargo of fruits and nuts, was completely wrecked on Fourth Cliff Beach. Crew saved.

May 22, 1848. Ship *Ocean Monarch* came ashore on Second Cliff Beach, but was towed away after some of her cargo of copper, tin, and crockery was thrown overboard.

May 31, 1848. The ship *Scott*, from New Orleans to Boston, laden with cotton, struck in Bassing Cove, but got off without much damage.

November 5, 1848. Brig struck on Cedar Point. Her cargo was coal. Capt. Stimson in command. Vessel and crew saved.

February 14, 1849. Brig *Oscar*, loaded with molasses from Matanzas, bound for Portland, was completely wrecked on Tilden's Point. Crew saved. On the same day the ship *Jenny Lind*, loaded with cotton, went ashore at Long Beach. A large schooner, laden with coke, went ashore below Fourth Cliff. The beach was covered with coke, but the next morning every bit was gone. About this time (as the almanac says) a brig laden with anthracite coal went all to pieces under Third Cliff; and the three-masted barque *Polycarp* came in on the sand between Third and Fourth Cliffs, and was taken off intact by two tow-boats.

April 16, 1851. This was the great storm which destroyed the first Minot's Ledge Lighthouse. It began on the fourteenth with a violent northeast wind, and turned into a tremendous gale, which caused an extraordinarily high tide. The conditions were at their worst when three wrecks occurred. The Russian brig *Wilhelmina*, from Cadiz, loaded with salt, was a total loss on Fourth Cliff Beach. Crew saved. Brig *Elizabeth* from Matanzas to Portland, loaded with sugar and molasses, went ashore at the mouth of North River. Vessel and cargo lost, and all but one of the crew. A schooner from Thomaston, loaded with lime, took fire and was run onto the beach at the same place. Crew saved.

September 21, 1851. A brig was lost on Third Cliff Beach. Crew saved, but the cargo was lost. The same day a barque was lost on Gull Ledge loaded with coal.

Crew saved. A brig was wrecked on Bar Rock. Cargo of coal was lost; vessel and crew saved.

1852. The London packet *Forest Queen* came ashore on Second Cliff Beach in the early morning of February 29, 1852, with forty immigrants on board, besides a cargo of general merchandise. She had been on a trading voyage for four years; it was said the cargo was very valuable, and of great variety, from gold watches to pig iron and steel. She struck in a thick snowstorm, but for a short time the sun shone brightly and the passengers were landed on the beach. Then, in a moment, the sunshine vanished and the storm burst again in greater fury, and an enormous quantity of the cargo was washed ashore. Vast quantities of ale, wine, gin, and liquors were thrown up on the beach and sampled on the spot. An amusing story is told of a man who came up the beach with a stone gin jug on every finger, but the mischievous boys found him an interesting target, and he reached high-water mark with only the handles of the jugs remaining. Valuable skins were picked up on the beach, which was covered with goods of all description. One man picked up a large quantity of indigo and sold it at one dollar and a half a pound; others did not recognize its value and passed it by. Cases of cochineal bugs were found. The hull was sold with the remainder of the cargo; divers were employed, and it was years before the task was finished, since pig iron, lead, and steel do not float. The very next day after the wreck of the *Forest Queen* a New York packet, loaded with corn and flour, came ashore not a hundred yards away. A line was rigged from the top of the cliff to the mast of the vessel, and the captain, his wife, and little boy, as well as the crew, were safely landed by means of the "breeches buoy."

March 2, 1853. A schooner loaded with corn and flour struck on Third Cliff. The crew were saved with great difficulty; vessel and cargo were lost.

December 29, 1853. The schooner *Mary E. Peirce*, of Bangor, from Wilmington to Boston, with a cargo of

lumber, came ashore off Scituate. Vessel and crew saved. Brig *Clio*, from Savannah to Boston, laden with cotton, came ashore on Fourth Cliff Beach. Crew and cargo saved, vessel a complete wreck. Schooner *Mt. Vernon* ashore at Cedar Point in the same storm. This heavy gale and snowstorm, which lasted two days, was disastrous to shipping all along the New England Coast.

December 30, 1853. Brig. *T. P. Perkins*, loaded with coal, went to pieces on Fourth Cliff Beach. Crew and cargo were saved.

A schooner loaded with lumber was entirely wrecked at the mouth of North River. A boy was drowned. Brig *Lafayette* was wrecked on Gunning's Point. Brig went ashore on Fourth Cliff Beach four weeks from the same day.

January 19, 1855. A Scotch brig, *Elizabeth*, struck on Third Cliff Beach and bilged. She was loaded with pig iron.

February 14, 1855. Schooner *Northern Light* wrecked on Tilden's Point.

March 10, 1855. A ship from New Orleans, laden with cotton, ran onto Fourth Cliff Beach. The captain, mate, and one seaman were drowned. Cargo saved; vessel a complete wreck.

Brig. on Fourth Cliff Beach loaded with staves. The cargo was unloaded on the beach, and vessel got off unhurt.

November 26, 1856. Brig. *Mora*, from New London, bound for Boston, ran onto First Cliff Beach. Vessel towed away after partly unloading the cargo, which consisted of elephant oil and ships' timber.

January 18, 1857. Brig *Judge Hathaway*, Capt. Small, wrecked on First Cliff Point. Vessel taken off in a damaged condition. One man drowned.

Schooner *August* came ashore in the harbor.

January 19, Schooner *Geneva*, from Georgetown to Boston, wrecked off Turner's Meadow, laden with hard pine timber. Capt. Perry, mate, and one seaman saved;

one man perished from exposure, three others were washed overboard and drowned. Cargo saved; vessel a total loss.

December 22, 1858. Schooner *Sally Badger*, from Pittston, Me., for New Bedford, loaded with lumber, upset in the Bay and drifted on shore near the Scituate Charity House at Fourth Cliff. All hands lost.

February 26, 1859. The American ship *Elizabeth*, of Kennebunk, Capt. Lord in command, went ashore during the thick, heavy snowstorm. The lifeboat of the Humane Society was manned, and put forth to the rescue of the crew. The ship was owned by George Callender and others of Boston, and had on board thirty-five hundred bales of cotton. The captain, in the thick storm, had mistaken the whereabouts of the entrance to Boston Harbor. As it was impossible to get the vessel off, she was unloaded and dismantled, and her hull sold.

March, 1860. Schooner *Annie Davis*, laden with oak staves from North Carolina, bound for Boston, went ashore on the Scituate side of North River at White's Ferry. Vessel and cargo saved.

The *George Peabody*, a full-rigged ship, came ashore not far from there in the same storm. She was laden with cotton, which was unloaded, and the ship saved.

The *Whittaker*, a brig, came ashore near the mouth of the North River. She was launched into the river after great difficulty.

March, 1861. A vessel was lost on Jenkins Ledge, only the captain being saved. (Davis Jenkins owned what has been lately known as the Norwell farm, near Shore Acres. Davis Point and Jenkins Point are one and the same, being the southern point of Shore Acres.)

In this same storm a particularly sad wreck occurred. A schooner with a load of lumber from Bangor, Me., came ashore. The captain had just lost his wife by death and his house by fire, and had taken his three little boys with him on this trip. The vessel broke up on the rocks,

and only the captain was saved. This was between Third and Fourth Cliffs. A week later the *Harvest Queen*, a little barque built for a slaver, by name *Webb*, of New York, laden with wood from Buenos Ayres, bound for Boston, came ashore south of Fourth Cliff. The cargo was unloaded on the beach and the vessel saved. They had taken a cargo of lumber to Buenos Ayres, intending to clear for the west coast of Africa for a load of "blackbirds," but when the American consul learned the fact he refused the clearance papers to that place, so they were obliged to change their plans.

November, 1861. The *Nathaniel Cogswell,* laden with lemons and raisins, sailed from Malaga with the *Young Turk* on a bet. The latter vessel arrived in Boston; the former was cast ashore south of Third Cliff.

November 7, 1862. The schooner *Maine Law* was wrecked on Barker's Cove. She discharged her cargo of soft coal and got off with slight damage. A large vessel, loaded with lumber, was ashore on Deacon Litchfield's Point; cargo was sold.

December 6, 1862. A schooner wrecked on Gunning's Point. She was saved after discharging her cargo of kerosene oil on the beach.

April, 1863. Schooner *Ruth,* loaded with sand, entirely lost on Otis Ellms' Beach. Crew saved.

November, 1866. Brig. *Jubilee*, from Nova Scotia, with forty passengers on board and a cargo of salmon, wrecked in a thick snowstorm off Deacon Litchfield's Point. (This is the north end of Shore Acres.) The brig came up high and dry on the beach, and all the passengers and crew were saved. The people of Egypt threw open their houses to the shipwrecked sufferers. They were entertained for two days, until their baggage could be secured from the vessel. A large proportion of these passengers were women and children.

January 1, 1868. Brig. *Julia Lingley*, from Peru, laden with saltpetre, wrecked on Long Beach. Vessel and crew saved.

December 1, 1868. A schooner, loaded with coal, was wrecked south of Fourth Cliff. Cargo and vessel lost; crew saved.

March, 1869. Schooner, loaded with coal, came ashore on Long Ledge.

1870. *Abigail Haley*, loaded with phosphate rock, wrecked under Third Cliff. Five men rescued.

March 1, 1872. *The Trojan*, from Porto Rico, bound for Boston, laden with sugar and molasses, wrecked on the south end of Third Cliff.

1873. A schooner, with a cargo of oranges, came ashore at Long Ledge. Everything was saved.

A barque was wrecked on "The Hazards" in the same storm.

The same year, a schooner, laden with sugar and horns, was completely wrecked on First Cliff Beach. Crew saved.

January 29, 1875. Schooner *Maracaibo*, loaded with pig iron, bound for Boston, struck on Gunning's Point. She was towed off after discharging her cargo by lighters. The next day the British schooner *Bessie*, with a cargo of herring, came ashore at the mouth of North River. The cargo was sold on the beach. Vessel and crew unhurt.

March 17, 1878. The Nantucket packet *William P. Nettleton* came up high and dry at the north end of Third Cliff. A volunteer crew of the Humane Society rescued the crew. There was no modern gear in use in Scituate at that time, but a line was sent ashore from the packet and made secure on land, and the crew came ashore on this line. When the captain reached the shore, he said in a low tone to Mr. E. Parker Welch, who received him, "Are you a Mason?" Mr. Welch replied, "No, I'm a Methodist." "Just as good, just as good," said the captain.

April, 1884. The schooner *Martha Weeks*, loaded with lime, took fire and drifted ashore on the rocks by Turner's meadow. Vessel and cargo were burned and crew saved.

February 3, 1885. The *Mary Killem* was discovered in distress on the south end of Third Cliff. A blinding

gale and northeast snowstorm made the sea very rough, but a lifeboat was launched and eight men were rescued in a pitiable condition. The vessel was a three-masted schooner from Havana, bound for Boston, with a cargo of sugar valued at $76,000. Only a small part of the sugar was saved. The vessel, valued at $25,000, was lost.

June 29, 1885. The *Elsie Fay*, a three-masted schooner hailing from Boston, was cast ashore on Lighthouse Point, just north of Scituate Harbor. She was bound for Boston with a cargo of pineapples valued at $70,000. The accident was due to a thick fog. She was taken off by a tug later in the day, having sustained but slight damage.

On the same day, the brigantine *Hotspur* ran onto Flurries Rock at North Scituate. She was from St. John, N. B., laden with sugar from Barbadoes. Fourth Cliff Life-Saving Station had been opened in 1879, and the captain, Frederick Stanley, with four men, went to her assistance. She was taken off by a tug at high water.

September 10, 1885. A small sloop, *Emily*, came ashore in a northeast gale. She was rescued by the station men.

October 6, 1885. The *Whistler*, a two-masted schooner owned by George Walbach, went on the flats at the entrance to North River.

October 28, 1885. The three-masted schooner *Lucy Graham*, coal-laden, from Hoboken, bound for Boston, ran ashore at Third Cliff in a thick fog. With the help of the men from the station and a tug-boat she was hauled off without injury.

January 9, 1886. Early in the morning a vessel was sighted ashore at Third Cliff. The life-savers, through a thick, blinding snowstorm, made their toilsome way to the wreck, which proved to be the *Joel Cook*, of Philadelphia, bound for Boston with a cargo of coal. She was on the rocks in a perilous position. Eight men were rescued by the breeches buoy and taken to Keeper Stanley's house to be cared for, as another wreck had been sighted at Humarock. Deep snow had fallen, and it was

with great difficulty that the life-savers made their way with their gear to Humarock. The sea was breaking over the schooner, and the crew were in the rigging. The wreck was about a hundred yards from the shore, and the Lyle gun was used to try to get a line aboard for the breeches buoy. The first time, the line parted; the second time, the gun shifted its position on the icy stones, and the shot went wild; the third and fourth lines parted; and the fifth fell overboard. This was all they had brought, so a trip back to the station was necessary, when E. Parker Welch appeared with a Hunt gun and lines belonging to the Humane Society. These were used, and after several attempts in the teeth of the gale the breeches buoy was established, and nine men were rescued. This vessel, the *Isaac Carlton*, from Machias, Me., was lost, with its cargo of coal.

December 6, 1886. A leaking lumber schooner from Kennebunk, bound for Boston, was stranded at the mouth of North River. The men were saved. The lumber was unloaded later and the schooner hauled up until spring.

December 7, 1886. Schooner *Florence* was wrecked north of Cedar Point. She was from Lunenburg, N. S., for Providence.

December 7, 1886. The *Florence A. Zink*, from Newfoundland, came ashore at Tilden's Point in a heavy northeast storm. It was lost, with its cargo of potatoes. The men from Fourth Cliff had great trouble in getting to the wreck, as the road was impassable with snow. When they reached the wreck they found that the crew of ten men, together with two women and a boy, had been rescued by the Humane Society crew. On the same day the brig *Susie Kiffen*, from New Brunswick, was wrecked off the north shore of Scituate Harbor. Her cargo was laths and piles. The captain and crew were saved by the Humane Society crew, who were near the spot.

May 28, 1887. The three-masted schooner *June Bright* was stranded on Davis Point. She was from

Fernandina, Fla., laden with hard pine. Her compass was out of order and the weather was very thick. The crew were rescued by Capt. Brown and his men, and the vessel was saved, with its cargo in good condition.

September 20, 1887. A Gloucester fishing schooner, *Light-Wing,* bound for Boston with a cargo of fish, was stranded between Third and Fourth Cliffs. The crew of ten men were saved by Capt. Stanley and his men. The schooner was lost. Cargo was insured.

February 10, 1888. Schooner *Agnes R. Bacon* wrecked near Fourth Cliff.

November 25, 1888. During the heavy gale and rainstorm, the fishing schooner *Edward H. Norton*, laden with fish for Boston, was capsized, and stranded off First Cliff. She was washed up on the beach, and at low tide one man crawled out from under the hull. The name of this sole survivor of sixteen men was Martin Allen, of South Boston.

November 26, 1888. Schooner *J. & J. Locke* (Isaac Burke, Master) broke adrift in Gloucester during the storm. Her crew were rescued by another vessel, and she drifted to Turner's Beach, where she struck, and came on shore bottom up. She was from Boston, bound for Yarmouth with a cargo of flour, kerosene, and general merchandise, and was a total loss. This was the most severe storm for years.

January 9, 1889. The *W. Parnell O'Hara*, a two-masted fishing schooner, struck on the beach at Second Cliff, but was taken away by tow-boat later on with little damage.

March 5, 1889. The brig *T. Remick*, from Surinam, was stranded on North Scituate Beach. The crew was saved, together with part of the cargo of sugar, molasses, and cocoa. The vessel was broken up on the beach at the next high tide, and the wreck was sold at auction.

September 20, 1889. A small schooner named *Active*, owned by Arthur Ward, loaded with salt, was stranded

at the entrance of the harbor. The cargo melted, and at high tide the schooner was pulled out on the flats.

March 6, 1890. The steamship *De Ruyter*, from Antwerp to Boston, came ashore at Lighthouse Point about six o'clock in the afternoon. She had a cargo of plate and window glass, iron, rags, and general merchandise. The steamer's signals of distress were answered by volunteers with the Humane Society's lifeboat, as well as by the crew from the station at North Scituate. All the men were saved, and the steamer was later towed to Boston.

May 9, 1890. Edward Edson had a narrow escape from drowning when a fishing schooner from Duxbury capsized and sunk about a mile from shore on Chest Ledge.

October 20, 1890. The fishing schooner *Frederick Tudor*, owned by George Walbach, parted her moorings in a heavy storm and stranded inside the harbor. She was pulled off at high water. The *Mary Emerson*, belonging to George Walbach, soon after found herself in the same trouble.

August 26, 1892. William Ward, of Scituate, was in great peril trying to enter the harbor with a sailboat loaded with nets and fish. He had become nearly exhausted in the rain and heavy sea when three men went to his help. In this same storm the little schooner *Fanny Fern*, laden with moss, was stranded on the beach at North Scituate. The two men on board had lost their dories and were in a position of great danger. They were rescued by Capt. Brown and his crew, and the schooner shortly afterwards went to pieces.

One of the notable wrecks off the First Cliff was the *Minnie Rowan*, which was a three-masted schooner, laden with coal, bound from Baltimore to Boston. This was February 1, 1894, in a northeast gale and snowstorm. She dragged her anchor and struck bottom in the forenoon. The roads being filled with snow, the life-saving men from Fourth Cliff station were obliged to go over the

A Wreck at Third Cliff

cliffs with their handcart and gear, making gaps in the stone walls as they went. After many attempts to get a line to the wreck, all of which were futile, a lifeboat was launched. They reached the wreck after being swept back twice. The captain's leg was broken, and he was suffering from exhaustion. The sea was so rough that before he and the ship's crew could get into the boat it was swept back to shore again. The fourth time the boat reached the wreck the men were rescued, but when the boat landed it was on the rocks, and it was broken in pieces. The men were taken to the nearest houses and cared for.

The two-masted schooner *Magnum* came ashore near Fourth Cliff in April, 1894. The crew were all saved, and the schooner, which was from Halifax, with no cargo, was sold on the beach.

September 18, 1894. The sloop *Nauset* was rescued from a dangerous position off Tilden's Point.

August 14, 1896. The *Oceanus*, a small schooner from Gloucester, loaded with fish, was stranded near Fourth Cliff, but got off at high water.

December 16, 1896. The two-masted *Puritan* was lost off Fourth Cliff. The crew were saved, furnished with clothing, and made comfortable at the Life-Saving Station.

November 27, 1898. In this great gale and storm the pilot boat *Columbia*, of Boston, parted her chains, drifted down the Bay, and came ashore at Cedar Point. All on board were drowned. The hull was bought by Otis Barker and transformed by him into a counterpart of the home on the sands of Old Peggotty and Little Em'ly.

February 7, 1899. The fishing schooner *Emma W. Brown*, from Georges Banks, with a cargo of fish for Boston, struck on Long Ledge, but was floated without much damage.

September 9, 1900. The steamer *John Endicott*, running between Plymouth and Boston, on her return trip struck a sunken ledge off Gull Ledge, and stranded. The two hundred and sixty-five passengers were taken off by Capt. Brown and his crew, by Humane Society volunteers, and by the steamer's own boats. A week later she was floated by Bell's Wrecking Company, but on the way to Boston she filled and sank.

The steamer *Claremont*, from Gloucester, came ashore near Fourth Cliff with no one on board, September 18, and was saved by Capt. Stanley. Another schooner, *George S. Boutwell*, from Portsmouth, with a load of paving-stones, came ashore at the same place and was lost, but the crew were saved and cared for at the station.

September 29, 1902. The steamer *Alderney*, with a cargo of coal from Cape Breton, bound for Boston, ran ashore on Cedar Point in a thick fog. With Capt. Brown's advice and assistance, and the sacrifice of twenty-five tons of coal, she got away safely.

January 30, 1904. A heavy gale and thick snowstorm raged which caused great destruction along the coast. The three-masted schooner from Savannah, bound for Boston, with a cargo of lumber, was stranded off Fourth Cliff. Owing to her position on the rocks it was impossible to get a boat to her, so the breeches buoy was used for the rescue of the eight men who composed her crew. The vessel broke in two, a total loss.

There was great excitement in town one cold, foggy day, when it was learned that the big steamship *Devonian* had come ashore on the south end of Third Cliff, only five hundred feet from the shore line, hard and fast on the rocks. There were ninety-seven souls on board. The crew and four passengers decided not to leave the ship, as there was no imminent danger, although they were offered assistance. The steamer was built in Belfast in 1900, and cost $700,000. The cargo of Egyptian cotton, hides, machinery, drygoods, crockery, mackerel, and general merchandise was said to be worth $1,000,000. She was later taken off by tug to Boston. This was February 15, 1906.

The *Mary Cabral*, loaded with fish, bound for Boston, was stranded on Humarock Beach, June 6, 1906. Vessel and crew were saved.

The *Governor Russell*, a fishing schooner, bound for Boston with a cargo of fish, came ashore at Fourth Cliff, August 9, 1906. She was hauled off at high tide.

1909. Schooner *Clio*, owned by Gorham Peters, with George Edson, Master, broke anchor and came ashore in the sand. Capt. Franzen and crew put her in a safe position.

September 26, 1909. The three-masted schooner *Gipsey Queen*, from Barbadoes, hoisted a signal of distress at the Glades, and Capt. Franzen and his crew went to the rescue. The vessel had a cargo of spruce piling, and had become unmanageable, having lost her foremast and her jib-boom. She had been leaking badly for some time, and in spite of every effort the water had reached the boilers and put out the fires.

The tug *Orion* was secured, and the schooner was towed to Lewis Wharf in Boston. The schooner was originally from Windsor, N. S., and had been used to carry gypsum.

December 26, 1909. The three-masted schooner *Nantasket*, from Georgetown, S. C., was stranded at Cedar Point. A gale and snowstorm, with roads filled with snow, made progress to the wreck with the

apparatus most difficult. When Capt. Franzen and his crew reached the spot, the Humane Society volunteers had already rescued three men. The remaining five were quickly saved. The vessel was a total loss.

Schooner *Matiana* was stranded off North Scituate Beach, February 12, 1910, in a snowstorm. She was on a fishing trip, with sixteen fishermen and one passenger aboard. Vessel a complete wreck, but the men were all saved. A most difficult and dangerous rescue was made by Capt. Franzen, October 20, 1911. A small boat and only one man in peril, but heroic work was needed owing to the position of the boat and the nearness of the breakwater. The man was rescued, but the tide going down, and the great combers coming in, made the salvage of the boat one of the most dangerous feats accomplished in years.

The steam sand barge *Jonas H. French*, laden with sand from North River, sprung a leak and sunk off North Scituate, September 28, 1914, in a heavy squall. The crew came ashore in their own boat.

Besides these notable wrecks, one-hundred-eight small sloops, power boats, sailboats, and dories, and two hundred men have been rescued by the life-saving men alone since 1879, when the first United States Government station was established in Scituate.

Every one of these wrecks, large and small, represents much toil and hardship on the part of the men, besides sympathy and kindliness in the resuscitation and care of the shipwrecked sufferers.

The author would acknowledge her indebtedness for valuable information to Mr. E. Parker Welch, Capt. Moses Colman, keepers of the Coast Guard Stations, and to Mrs. Mary Turner, who kept for years a complete record of wrecks, many of which could be seen from her home.

Town Seals

SCITUATE'S first Town Seal was made from a design prepared by a committee consisting of Charles O. Ellms, and John J. Ford, Chairman of the Board of Selectmen. It was used on the back cover of the Town Report of 1899. A second seal was designed by Henry Turner Bailey in 1900, and was used for three years. Both seals read, "Incorporated 1633." Attention having been called to the error in date of incorporation, Mr. Bailey's design, with correct date affixed, was accepted, and officially adopted by the town.

Norwell's Town Seal was adopted in 1899. Design presented by Joseph C. Otis, Town Clerk.

Symbolism of the Town Seal

Satuit Brook, from which the town derives its name.

At the left a *cliff*, at the right the *ocean*.

In the distance a *Cedar Point*, with rocks running out into the water, and a *Pilgrim ship*.

An Indian, *Wampatuck*, from the land and the west, with a *scroll*, conferring grants of land and privileges.

A Pilgrim, *Timothy Hatherly*, from the sea and the east, receiving the scroll.

The dress of the Indian is taken from the Massachusetts State seal, and that of the Pilgrim from the Colonial paintings by Boughton.

Henry Turner Bailey,
Designer.

Communion Silver of the First Parish Church, Scituate

THE six silver beakers belonging to the communion service of the First Parish Church (Unitarian) of Scituate were loaned on June 25, 1910, to the Boston Museum of Fine Arts, to be shown at an Exhibition of Old Church Silver. They were placed in the large case in the hall on the second floor, where the three oldest still remain, while the other three are in a large safe where they, with much other valuable silver, are perfectly secure from fire or thieves.

The collection is highly prized at the Museum as a very worthy exhibit of Colonial Silver. The beakers are cataloged thus:

1111.10. American Silver. 18th Century. Maker, Joseph Clark. (Conn.) Beaker. Moulded base, straight sides, flaring lip. Inscribed: The Gift of Mr. Jonathan Merrit to the First Church of Christ in Scituate, 1757.

1112.10. American Silver. 19th Century. Maker, Nathan Hobbs. (Silversmith of Boston.) Beaker like 1113.10. Inscribed: The Gift of Deacon Seth Merritt to the First Church of Christ in Scituate, 1824.

1113.10. American Silver. 19th Century. Maker, Nathan Hobbs. Beaker. Moulded base, straight sides, turned back edge. Inscribed: The Gift of Jesse Dunbar, Esq., to the First Church of Christ in Scituate, 1828. (Mate to 1114.10.)

1114.10 is an exact mate to 1113.10.

1115.10. American Silver. 19th Century. Maker, Nathan Hobbs. Beaker like 1113.10. Inscribed: The Gift of Mr. Chandler Clapp to the First Church of Christ in Scituate, 1828.

1116.10. American Silver. 19th Century. Maker, Nathan Hobbs. Beaker like 1113.10. Inscribed: The Gift of Miss Mary and Miss Hannah Clapp to the First Church of Christ in Scituate, 1828.

An Interesting Bill of Sale

Know all men by these presents that I Job Tilden of hanover in the county of plymouth in new england, yeoman In Consideration of Thirty Three pounds in good silver monney to me in hand paid by Joseph Tilden J^{unr} of scituate in the county of plymouth in new england, yeoman the Receit whereof I do hereby acknowledge have given granted assigned sett over and doe hereby give granted Said assign Sett over and deliver unto him the said Joseph Tilden J$^{unr.}$ my negre garl named florow being about nine years old and is a servant for life to have and to hold said floro unto him the sai Joseph Tilden J$^{unr.}$, his exesequters and assigns and I do hereby covenant with said Tilden his Exscuters and assigns the said garl is sound and in good health and that I have good Right to make sale of her for Life as aforesaid and doe hereby warrint the said floro a servant for Life unto him the said Tilden his Exescuters and assigns witnesed my hand and seal

desember 14 1762 adomini

JOB TILDEN

Signed sealled and delivered In presence of

THOMAS BATES

JOSHUA BATES

Scituate Soldiers and Sailors of the American Revolution

These names of the soldiers and sailors in the Revolutionary War were taken from the volumes of Soldiers and Sailors of Massachusetts, published by the state, by Mrs. Clara Turner Bates, of North Scituate.

A

Allen, Joseph

B

Bailey, Abner
Bailey, Benjamin
Bailey, Caleb
Bailey, Paul
Bates, Clement
Baites, Seth
Baker, ———
Baker, Bradford
Baker, Kenelm
Baker, Windsor
Baldwin, Samuel
Barker, Barnabas
Barker, David
Barker, John
Barker, William
Barrell, James
Barrell, William
Barrell, Colburn
Barrall, William
Barrall, James
Barral, William
Barrel, Noah
Barstow, Nathaniel
Barstow, Thomas
Bates, Alex (seaman)
Bates, Alex (soldier)
Bates, Clement
Bates, Guy (name 5 times)
Bates, Reuben
Bates, Seth
Bates, Lemuel
Beals, Isaac
Belcher, Ebenezer
Benson, Joseph
Barstow, James
Briggs, Abner
Bryant, Elijah
Bryant, Zina
Bonney, Isaac
Bonney, Jonathan
———, Neil, Scituate
Bourne, Shearjashub
Bowan, Calvin
Bowen, ———
Bowker, Bartlet
Bowker, David
Bowker, Gershom
Bowker, John, Jr.
Bowker, J.
Bowker, L. (twice)
Bowker, Windsor
Bosworth, Eli
Briggs, B.
Briggs, D.
Briggs, Joseph (several times)
Briggs, Thomas
Briggs, William
Brooks, Nathaniel (twice)
Brooks, Joseph
Brooks, Philip
Brooks, William
Brown, Isaac
Brown, John

Brown, Jonathan
Brown, Joseph
Brown, Knight
Brown, Samuel (twice)
Brown, S.
Brown, Thomas
Bryant, ———
Bryant, Jno.
Bryant, Joshua
Bryant, J., Jr.
Bryant, Lynde
Bryant, Samuel
Buker, Calvin
Buker, David
Buker, Joshua (twice)
Buker, William
Burgess, John

C

Comset, James (Indian)
Capham, Thomas
Corlew, Daniel
Carlisle, William
Corlew, W.
Carey, Joshua
Caslew, Darius
Castle, Darius
Caswell, Darius
Child, Daniel
Chittenden, Isaac (twice)
Chittenden, Luther
Chittenden, Nathaniel (twice)
Chittenden, Gideon
Church, Nathaniel
Church, Thomas
Clapp, Abiah
Clapp, Abijah
Clapp, Dwelly
Clapp, Earl
Clapp, John
Clapp, John, Jr.
Clapp, Michael
Clapp, William
Clapp, Abijah, Jr.
Clapp, Bela
Clapp, Galen
Clapp, John (4 times)
Clapp, Joshua
Clapp, Samuel
Cole, George
Colamore, Benjamin (5 times)
Colamore, Anthony (4 times)
Colamore, Benjamin, Jr.
Colamore, ———
Colamore, Anthony, Jr.
Colamore, Enoch, Sergeant
Colamore, Enoch, Private
Colamore, Thomas
Colamore, B.
Collamore, Anthony
Collamore, Benjamin (twice)
Collamore, Thomas
Collier, Isaac (3 times)
Collier, Jon.
Collins, Joseph
Comset, Joshua (Indian)
Cook, Robert, Jr.
Cook, Robert
Copeland, Wm.
Coplin, Ebenezer
Corlew, Daniel
Corthell, Theophilus
Cowen, Jehiel
Cowen, John
Cowen, Gathelus
Cowen, Israel
Cudworth, Israel
Cudworth, John
Cudworth, Zephaniah
Cushing, James (twice)
Carlisle, William
Curtis, Reuben
Curtis, Abner
Curtis, Benjamin
Curtis, Charles
Curtis, Eli

Curtis, Elisha
Curtis, Gamaliel
Curtis, Peleg
Curtis, Peleg, Jr.
Curtis, Samuel
Curtis, Thomas
Curtis, William
Cushing, Adam
Cushing, Barker
Cushing, Edward
Cushing, Elmer
Cushing, Hawks
Cushing, John, Jr.
Cushing, Nathaniel
Cushing, Pickles

D

Delano, Benjamin (twice)
Damon, Daniel
Damon, Calvin
Damon, Ells (3 times)
Damon, John (twice)
Damon, Josiah, Jr.
Damon, Samuel (twice)
Damon, Simeon (3 times)
Damon, Stephen
Damon, Stephen, Jr.
Damon, Sylvanus
Damon, Zadoc
Damon, Reuben
Damon, Josiah
Delano, Elijah
Dingley, Elkanah
Dingley, Levi
Doggett, Ebenezer
Doroty, John
Dotens, W.
Dunbar, Amos
Dunbar, Daniel
Dunbar, David (11 times)
Dunbar, David, Jr.
Dunbar, Enoch
Dunbar, Ezekiel
Dunbar, Hosea
Dunbar, Jessee
Dwelley, Abner
Dwelley, William
Dwellie, Jedediah
Dwellie, Abner
Dwellie, John
Dwelly, Joshua

E

Eddy, Ebenezer (twice)
Edwards, Daniel
Ells, Nathaniel
Ells, Samuel
Elems, Jonathan
Elems, Benjamin
Ellms, John
Ellms, Joseph
Ellms, Jonathan

F

Farrow, Thomas
Frary, George
Fish, Charles
Fish, Isaac
Fish, Stephen
Ford, Micah
Ford, William
Ford, David
Foster, Elisha

H

Hallowell, Jonathan
Hammond, Bela
Hammond, Benjamin (R.A.—Royal Americans)
Hammond, David
Hammond, Experience
Hammond, Frederick (16 years)
Hammond, William
Hatch, Benjamin, Sergeant
Hatch, John
Hatch, Josiah
Hatch, Prince
Hatchey, Joseph (deserter)
Hathaway, Josiah

Hause, John, Lieutenant
Hayden, Daniel
Hayden, Elisha
Hayden, Ezra
Hayden, Joseph
Hayden, Perez (17 years)
Hayden, William
Henley, John (a foreigner)
Henley, William
Hersey, Elisha
Hiland, Amasa
Hiland, William
Hinds, Abiah
Hinds, Abiel
Holbrook, Isaiah
Holbrook, Josiah
Holbrook, Luther
Holmes, Thomas, Corporal
Holmes, Benjamin
Holmes, Nathaniel
Hopkins, Richard
House, Abner (R. A.)
House, Joseph
House, Nathaniel
House, Peleg (R. A.)
Humphries, John (twice)
Humphrey, Richard
Hyland, Abner
Hyland, Amasa
Hyland, Benjamin
Hyland, Benjamin, Jr. (R. A.)
Hyland, Samuel
Hyland, William

J

Jacobs, Aesop
Jacobs, Elli
Jacobs, James, Corporal
Jacobs, John, Colonel
Jacobs, Joshua, Lieutenant
James, Elisha, Sergeant
James, Thomas
Jeffrey, James
Jenkins, Caleb (R. A.)
Jenkins, Daniel
Jenkins, Edward
Jenkins, Joseph (R. A.)
Jenkins, Samuel
Jenkins, Calvin
Jenkins, Gera
Jenkins, Gideon
Jenkins, James
Jenkins, Joshua (R. A.)
Jenkins, Nathaniel
Jones, Ezekiel
Jones, Benjamin
Jones, Dearing
Jones, William
Jones, William, Jr.
Jordan, David
Jordan, Nathaniel
Joy, Elisha

K

Keen, Joshua
King, John
Knowles, Amasa

L

Lambert, Isaac
Lambert, Zacheus
Lambert, Zachariah
Lapham, Amos
Lapham, Elisha (R. A.)
Lapham, James
Lapham, Lemuel
Lapham, Nathaniel
Lapham, Thomas
Lazell, John
Lincoln, James
Lincoln, John
Lincoln, Mordecai
Lincoln, Solomon
Lincoln, William
Litchfield, Charles
Litchfield, Abner
Litchfield, Amos
Litchfield, Barnabas

Litchfield, Caleb
Litchfield, Daniel
Litchfield, Eleazer
Litchfield, Elisha
Litchfield, Ephraim
Litchfield, Experience
Litchfield, Ezekiel
Litchfield, Francis
Litchfield, Isaac
Litchfield, Israel
Litchfield, James
Litchfield, James, Jr.
Litchfield, Job (R. A.)
Litchfield, John (R. A.)
Litchfield, John, Jr.
Litchfield, Joseph
Litchfield, Josiah
Litchfield, Lawrence
Litchfield, Lot
Litchfield, Lothrop
Litchfield, Nathaniel(R.A.)
Litchfield, Nathaniel, Jr. (R. A.)
Litchfield, Nickles
Litchfield, Noah (R. A.)
Litchfield, Rowland, Corporal
Litchfield, Samuel (R. A.)
Litchfield, Ward (R. A.)
Litchfield, Daniel (R. A.)
Loring, William

M

Man, Jonathan (R. A.)
Man, Josiah
Man, Josiah, Jr.
Man, Levi
Man, Nathaniel
Manson, John (R. A.)
Manson, Nehemiah
Mayhew, Lemuel, or Samuel
Mayhew, or Mayo, William
McCarty, James (a transient)
McGovern, Seth
Merritt, Joshua
Merritt, Jonathan
Merritt, David
Merritt, George
Merritt, Nehemiah
Merritt, Amos
Merritt, Consider
Merritt, Daniel
Merritt, John
Merritt, Melzar
Merritt, Noah
Merritt, Seth
Merritt, Paul
Mitchell, John
Morris, William (19 years in 1777)
Morton, George
Morton, George, Jr. (R. A.)
Mott, Attwood
Mott, Micah

N

Nash, Abel
Nash, Church
Nash, Israel
Nash, James
Nash, Joseph
Nash, Noah
Nash, Thomas
Neal, Job
Nichols, Noah
Nicholson, William (aged 18)
Nickerson, Joseph
Nicherson, or Nicholson, Mark (aged 21)
Nichols, Caleb
Nichols, Samuel
Northey, David (aged 22)
Northey, Eliphalet
Northey, Eliphalet, Jr.
Northey, James
Northey, Robert

O

Oakman, Amos
Oates, Asher (died 1778)
Orcutt, Seth
Osborn, Peleg
Otis, Charles
Otis, Barnabas
Otis, Captain, Ensign (R. A.)
Otis, James
Otis, Josiah (surgeon)
Otis, Noah

P

Paine, Jonathan
Palmer, Ephraim, Sergeant
Patrick, Edmund
Patten, John
Peakes, Benjamin, Sergeant (R. A.)
Peakes, Eleazer, Corporal
Pearce, Sylvanus, Corporal, Fifer
Peirce, Augustus
Peirce, Calvin, Lieutenant
Peirce, Ezekiel
Peirce, Capt. Hayward, or Howard
Peirce, Matthew
Peirce, Robert
Peirce, Rowland
Perry, Israel, Quartermaster
Perry, Amos
Pincheon, William (aged 20)
Pincheon, Benjamin
Pincheon, or Pincin, Simeon
Prouty, Joshua, Corporal (aged 27, died 1778)
Prouty, Job
Prouty, Bela
Prouty, Caleb (R. A.)
Prouty, David
Prouty, James
Prouty, Simeon (aged 30)
Prouty, William

R

Ramsdell, Edmund
Ramsdell, Samuel
Randall, Elisha
Randall, Charles
Randall, Elijah
Randall, Nehemiah
Right, John
Ripley, Joshua
Rose, Laban
Rose, Reuben
Ruggles, Thomas

S

Sampson, Nehemiah (mulatto)
Samson, Robert (foreigner)
Sears, Peter
Sears, Isaac (died Feb. 15, 1778)
Silvester, Elijah
Silvester, Elisha
Silvester, Israel
Silvester, James (deserted 1778)
Silvester, Joel
Silvester, Nathaniel
Silvester, Thomas
Simmons, Peleg
Simmons, Barnabas
Simmons, Bartholomew
Simmons, Ebenezer
Simmons, Elisha
Simmons, Samuel (R. A.)
Southworth, Theophilus
Sprague, Joshua
Sprague, Laban
Studley, Ammiel
Studley, William
Stetson, Benjamin
Stetson, Christopher
Stetson, Elijah

Stetson, Elisha
Stetson, Ephraim
Stetson, George
Stetson, Gideon
Stetson, Isaac
Stetson, John
Stetson, Jonah
Stetson, Joseph
Stetson, Matthew
Stetson, Micah
Stetson, Nathan
Stetson, Samuel
Stetson, Silas
Stetson, Snow
Stetson, Stephen

T

Turner, Abiel
Turner, Abiezer
Turner, Abner
Turner, Asa
Turner, Charles
Turner, Consider
Turner, David
Turner, Dwelley
Turner, Elijah
Turner, Elisha
Turner, Isaac
Turner, Jacob, Lieutenant
Turner, James
Turner, Jonathan, Lieutenant
Turner, Nathaniel
Turner, Peleg, Lieutenant
Turner, Roland
Turner, Simeon
Turner, William, Colonel
Turner, Winslow

V

Vassall, Benjamin, Lieutenant
Vinal, Benjamin (R. A.)
Vinal, Calogus
Vinal, Joseph
Vinal, Joseph, Jr. (R. A.)
Vinal, Robert
Vinal, Stephen (R. A.)
Vinal, William, Lieutenant (R. A.)

W

Wade, Abednego
Wade, Benjamin
Wade, Issachar
Wade, John
Wade, Jotham
Wade, Snell
Wade, Stephen
Walker, William
Waterman, Anthony
Webb, Barnabas
Webb, Paul
Webb, Thomas
West, Josiah

Rangers

Micah Stetson
Wm. Pinchin
Thomas Holmes
Thomas Church
Melzar Stodder
John Lincoln
Benja. Pinchin
Joseph House
Levi Pratt
Silas Stetson
David Turner
David Jordan
Joshua Comsett (Indian)
Thomas Silvester
Elisha Young

Names of the Men of Scituate Who Loaned Money for Carrying on the War of the Revolution Copied from the Honor Roll of Massachusetts Patriots

Chief Justice William Cushing

William James
Barnabas Little
Nehemiah Randall
Thomas Silvester
Caleb Torrey
Seth Turner
Nathaniel Waterman

Capt. Hayward Peirce's Company in Camp at Tiverton, R. I., October 27, 1777

Capt. Hayward Peirce
Left. Zephaniah Cudworth
Left. Seth Josselyn
Left. Elisha Foster
Sergt. William Curtis
Sergt. William Brooks
Sergt. Nathaniel Brooks
Sergt. John Bowker

Privates

Gathelus Cowing
William Hammond
Zaccheus Lambert
Joseph Brooks
Daniel Haydon
Josiah Damon
Noah Pratt
Nathaniel Man
James Whiting
James Cushing
Seth Bates
Jonathan Merritt, Jr.
Asa Taylor
Obadiah Stodder
Stephen Fish
William Hyland
Nathaniel Magoun
Nehemiah Manson
Nathaniel Torrey
Laban Rose
Joseph Turner
Benjamin Tower
Bartlett Bowker
Caleb Litchfield
John Litchfield
Elisha Sylvester
Benjamin Bowker
Noah Merritt
Elisha Stetson
William Vinall
Thomas Lincoln
Abner Litchfield
Jonathan Brown
Japhet Crooker
Robart Peirce
Michael Frayne
Jesse Curtis
Elijah Gilbert
Zadock Damon
William Hayden
Perry Haiden
Elisha Randall
Eleazer Litchfield
John Litchfield, Jr.
Josiah Man
Elijah Curtis

Joseph Tolman
Thomas Ruggles
Nathaniel Josselyn, Jr.
Eliphilet Northy
Mordecai Lincon
Seth Curtis
Ishmael Buker
Primus Ripley
Robeart Cook
Seth Curtis, Jr.
Isaac Stetson
James Barstow
Isaiah Cushing
Job Prouty
Samuel Brooks
Luther ——
James Comsett (Indian)
Lemuel Bates
Eliphalet Northy, Jr.
Amos Lapham
Elisha Palmer
Jonathan ——
Joshua Dwelley
Elijah Sylvester
Joseph Nickerson
Benjamin Jones
Simeon Curtis

William Hammond, Drummer Joseph Turner, Fifer

Marched on a secret expedition to Tiverton, R. I.

Copy of Names on the Payroll of the Company of Royal Americans of the Town of Scituate, under Command of the Field Officers of the Second Regiment of Plymouth County

Three days' service; traveled 12 miles. January 1, 1776

(Copied from Mass. Archives, Vol. 13.)

Capt. Ensign Otis *Ensign* Zepheniah Cudworth
Left. William Vinal *Sergt.* Peleg House

Privates

Samuel Simmons
Charles Fish
George Morton, Jr.
Zena Bryant
Benjamin Woodworth
Caleb Jenkins
Bartholemew Simmons
Josiah Damond, Jr.
Ward Litchfield
Joseph Vinal, Jr.
Benjamin Vinal
Isaac Collier
Joshua Jenkins
Nathaniel Litchfield
Samuel Mahew
Reuben Bates
Caleb Prouty
Ezekiel Dunbar
Nathaniel Litchfield, Jr.
John Manson
Abner House
John Litchfield
Ephraim Litchfield
Josiah Mann
Elijah Bryant
Eli Curtis
Gideon Chittenden
Samuel Litchfield

Stephen Vinal
Benjamin Hyland, Jr.
Noah Litchfield
Joseph Jenkins
Joshua Spriggs
Robert Cook, Jr.
Job Litchfield
Benjamin Peakes
John Cudworth
Abner Briggs
Benjamin Hammond
Elisha Lapham

Index

A	PAGE
Abbie Bradford	149
Abigail Haley	253
Abraham	153
Acadians, The	78
Accord Pond	5, 69, 236
Active	256
Adams, Abigail	49
Adams House, Quincy	34
Adams, James	32
Adams, John	32, 53
Adams, Samuel	48
Adet, M.	48
Adventure	151
Agnes R. Bacon	256
Alabama	149
Albeson, Nicholas	11
Albion	151
Alderney	259
Allen Associates	85
Allen, Martin	256
Allen Memorial Library	159
Allen, Rev. Morrill	103
Allen, William P.	103
Allen's Hall	206
Almatia	158
Ambrose Cole House	112
America	150
American Total Abstinence Society	173
Ancient Colonial Boundary	69
Annable, Anthony	3, 99, 120
Annie Davis	251
Anti-slavery	174
Antoine, Joseph	240
"Army of Two"	144
Asa Eldridge	161
Asbury, Francis	186
Assinippi	217
Assinippi Pond	236
Assinippi Trail	101
Attila	245
Attleboro Gore	25
August	250
Austin, Ann	72
Aylwin, Hannah Phillips	50
Aylwin, William Cushing	54

B	PAGE
Bacon, Edward R.	111
Bailey, Abigail	118
Bailey, Amasa	118, 219
Bailey Farm	85
Bailey, George W.	199
Bailey, Henry Turner	208, 262
Bailey, John	82, 85
Bailey, Joseph Tilden	137
Bailey, Mercy	212
Bailey, Thomas Otis	118
Bailey, Thomas Tilden	196
Baker, Rev. Frank R.	192
Balch, Sarah	112
Bald Hills	149, 150
Baldwin, Rev. Samuel	215
Ballou, Rev. G. W.	191
Ballou, Rev. Hosea	185
Baptist Church	136, 209
Barb	245
Barker, Benjamin	85
Barker Farm	95
Barker, Hannah	95
Barker, Jacob	150
Barker, Otis	86, 259
Barker, Robert	150
Barker, Samuel	95
Barker, Samuel P.	85, 86
Barker, Capt. Williams	85
Barker, Williams	85
Barker's Cove	252
Barker's Lane	84
Barnard, James H.	128
Barnes, Rev. David	124, 129, 171, 172, 173, 181
Barrell, James	154
Barry, Rev. John S.	21, 185
Barry's "History of Hanover"	183
Barstow, Capt. Elisha	148
Barstow, Joseph	18
Bartlett, Rev. Mr.	199
Bartow, Rev. H. K.	209
Bassing Cove	248
Bates, Abigail	145
Bates, Harvey	65
Bates, John	187
Bates, Joseph S.	148

PAGE

Bates, Joshua 265
Bates, Rev. L. B. 200, 201
Bates, Rebecca 145
Bates, Capt. Simeon 145
Bates, Thomas 265
Bear Grass Fort 106
Beaver Dam Road 114
Belcher, Andrew 151
Belle House 30
Belle House Neck 36, 52, 55, 59, 60, 63, 98, 125, 126, 170
Bemis, Rev. Nathaniel 188, 190
Bennett, John W. 240
Berry, Charles A. 101
Bessie 253
Betsey 152
Bigelow, Mr. 48
"Big House," The 204
Bingham, Mr. and Mrs. 48
Bisbee, Elisha 66
Bisbee's Ferry 66
Blackmore, William 11, 138
Black Pond 236
Black Pond Road 82
Black Thorne 150
Blessings of the Bay 148
Block House 9, 99, 110, 226
Block House Field 9
Block House Shipyard 152
Bonney, Edward H. 123
Boone, Daniel 106
Booth, Abraham 136
Booth Hill 136, 232, 234
Bordeaux 247
Boston Courier 224
Boston News Letter 62
Boston Rubber Cement Co. 221
Boston Weekly News Letter 102
Boundaries 5
Bound Brook 59, 88, 104, 105, 196, 216
Bound Brook Press 199
Bound Rock 69, 71
Bourne, Rev. Shearjashub 165,177
Bouvé, Mary 192
Bowers, Capt. Henry 212
Bowers, Henry, Jr. 227
Bowker, James 101, 217
Bowker, Parsons 65
Box Making 222
Boynton, Lucy 140
Bradford, Alice 16
Bradford, Gov. William 16, 226
Brewster, Jonathan 59
Brewster's Ferry 59

PAGE

Brick Kiln Yard 156
Briggs, B. W. 157, 158
Briggs, Charles C. 119, 156
Briggs-Collier House 86
Briggs, Cornelius 92
Briggs, Cushing O. 156
Briggs, Frances 92
Briggs, Hannah 92
Briggs, Henry 156
Briggs, James 90, 92, 154, 155, 156, 219
Briggs, James S. 157, 198
Briggs, John 90, 92
Briggs, Joseph 90
Briggs, Judith 90
Briggs, Lucy and Sally 156
Briggs, Luther 158
Briggs, Dr. L. Vernon 101
Briggs, Matthew (Mathyas) 23, 33
Briggs, Thomas B. 119, 156
Briggs, Walter 24, 88, 89, 90, 92, 93, 94, 95
Briggs, Wm. T. 156
Briggs Yard 153
Brockwell, Rev. Charles 180
Bronson, Noah 64
Brooks, Adam 77
Brooks, Gilbert 23
Brooks, William 11
Brooks, William (Capt.) 127
Brown, Capt. George 220, 257, 259
Brushy Hill 29, 59, 65, 97, 166
Bryant-Cushing House 109
Bryant, David 21
Bryant, Gridley 136
Bryant, Gridley J. F. 137
Bryant, John, Jr. (Lieut.) 101, 216, 219
Bryant, John, Sr. 11, 101, 110, 216
Bryant, John, 3d 214
Bryant, Lemuel (Rev.) 111
Bryant, Mary 110
Bryant, Ruth 110
Bryant, Thomas (Dea.) 110, 216
Bryant, Zina 137
Bryant's Corner 62, 101, 125
Bryant's Mill 215
Bryant's Pond 241
Buck, Cornet John (Lieut.) 11, 12, 13
Bucklyn, David 151
Bulfinch, Charles 154
Bulfinch, Dr. Thomas 154

PAGE

Bulwark 144
Bumpas, John 11
Burke, Isaac 256
Burke, Martin 206
Burrell, Benjamin 223
Buttonwood Hill 11
Byrd, Goodman 2

C

Caldwell, John 38
Callender, George 251
Campbell, John 61
Canonchett 8
Capt. Stephen Otis House 103
Capt. Travere 6
Carman, Bliss 225
Caroline 161
Carroll, Margaret 206
Cedar Point 143, 247, 250, 255, 259, 260
Champion 245
Chapman, Ralph 59
Chauncey, Rev. Charles 31, 164, 169
Chest Ledge 257
Cheverus, Bishop 203
Chew, Mr. 48
Chicatabutt, Josias 17
Chief Justice Cushing Chap. 164
Chisholm *v.* Georgia 41, 46
Chittenden, Isaac 12
Chittenden Shipyard 151, 152
Chittenden, Thomas 28
Christ Church, Quincy 178
Christian Endeavor Soc. 200
Church Hill 28, 29, 178, 179
Church History 162
Church of the Nativity 206
Church, Nathaniel 148
Church, Samuel 215
Claremont 259
Clark & Hart Shipyard 157
Clarke, Wm. 16
Clap, Augustus 63
Clap, Benjamin 212
Clap, Constant 215
Clap & Curtis Mills 215
Clap, Elizabeth 98
Clap, Hannah 108
Clap, John 220
Clap, John (Capt.) 27, 213
Clap, Joseph 82, 151
Clap, Nathaniel B. 102
Clap, Rachel 139

PAGE

Clap, Samuel (Capt.) 27, 101, 213
Clap, Stephen (Dea.) 101, 102
Clap, Sylvanus 103
Clap, Thomas 212
Clap, Thomas (Pres.) 101, 102
Clapp, Chandler 264
Clapp, Charles 64
Clapp, Elijah 212
Clapp, Franklin B. 212
Clapp, Harvey 212
Clapp Mansion 63
Clapp, Mary L. 63, 204, 207, 264
Clapp Rubber Mill 61
Cliff, First 250
Cliff, Fourth 237, 238
Cliff, Third 2
Cliffs, The 236
Clio 250
Clio 259
Clipper Ships 160
Cobb, Henry 3
Cohasset Road 59
Cold Water Army, The 174
Cole, Ambrose 112
Cole, Andrew 158
Cole, Augustus 220
Cole, David 112, 141
Cole Farm 4
Cole, Frederic T. 166
Cole, Jane 113
Cole, Mary Ann 113
Cole, William 112, 141
Collamore, Capt. Anthony 6, 58, 245
Collamore's Ledge 58, 245
Collier, Ann 91
Collier, Isaac 91
Collier, James 91
Collier, Mary 91
Collier, Thomas 91
Collier, William 91
Colman, Joseph 246
Colman, Capt. Moses 161, 261
Colman's Hills 2, 28, 29, 30, 233
Columbia 153
Columbia 242, 259
Columbia Rediviva 154, 155
Columbia River 154
Columbian Sentinel 223
Committee of Safety 181
Communion Silver 264
Conant, Rev. Thomas 196, 198
Conihasset Grants 2, 23

	PAGE
Conihasset Hall	232
Conihasset Partners	66, 103, 211
Constantia	246
Constitution	130
Constitutional Post-office	62
Cook, Capt. Ichabod	160
Cook, John	160
Cook, Samuel	160
Cooper, Rev. Joseph	192
Copeland, Ebenezer	28
Copeland, Huldah	28
Copeland, Joseph	28
Copeland, William	148
Copley Portraits	85
Copper Corner	109, 123, 129
Cordelia	245
Cordwood Hill	29
Cornet's Mill	10, 14, 17
Cornet's Purchase	17
Cottle, Charles	220
Cotton, John	36, 171
Country Way	16, 59, 134, 140
Cowen, John	24
Craigie-Longfellow House	34
Cricket Hole	82
Cromwell, Oliver	84
Crown Point	107
Cudworth, Dea. Abiel	195, 200
Cudworth, Elijah	152
Cudworth House	135
Cudworth, James (Capt.) (Gen.)	7, 13, 22, 24, 73, 74, 90, 95, 136, 195
Cudworth, Mary	74
Cudworth, Rev. Ralph	75
Cudworth, Samuel Stillman	200
Cudworth, Zephaniah	135
Cuffee's Lane	82
Cummings, Betty	188
Curtis, Andrew	208
Curtis, Benjamin	215
Curtis, Capt. Calvin	215
Curtis, Charles	181
Curtis Crossing	61
Curtis, Capt. Edward	215
Curtis, Elijah	138, 139
Curtis Hill	11
Curtis, James	100, 158
Curtis, John	11
Curtis, Luther	29
Curtis Mills	215
Curtis, Paul	100
Curtis, Samuel	151
Curtis, Shadrack (Mrs.)	205
Curtis, William	11
Cushing	156
Cushing, Abigail	37
Cushing, Alice	126
Cushing, Charles	36, 54
Cushing, Chief Justice	35, 38, 40, 76
Cushing, Christopher	126
Cushing, Clarissa	111
Cushing, George, Jr.	125
Cushing, George, Sr.	125
Cushing, George King	125
Cushing, George, 4th	125
Cushing, Grafton D.	46
Cushing, Hawke	111, 216
Cushing, Hayward P.	127
Cushing Homesteads	124
Cushing, H. W. (Dr.)	111, 125
Cushing, Jeremiah (Rev.)	165
Cushing, John	22, 33, 36, 55, 125, 126, 149
Cushing, John, 4th	34, 55
Cushing, Joseph	125
Cushing, Joseph, Jr. (Dea.)	55, 111
Cushing, Josiah	216
Cushing, Judge John	63
Cushing, Judge John, 2d	52, 172
Cushing, Judge Nathan	37, 65, 63, 125, 127
Cushing, Judge William	36, 41, 42, 53, 56, 63
Cushing, Madam Hannah	37, 41, 46, 53, 212, 227
Cushing Mansion, The	52
Cushing, Matthew	36
Cushing Memorial	45
Cushing, Nathan	126
Cushing, Nathaniel	126
Cushing, Pickles	130, 216
Cushing, Ruth	111
Cushing, Zeba	196
Cutler, Rev. Timothy	176, 177, 178

D

Dallin, Cyrus	46
Damon, Daniel E.	177
Damon, Franklin	190, 198
Damon, Galen, Jr.	219
Damon, Galen, Sr.	219
Damon, Galen, Mill	219
Damon, Capt. James	160
Damon, Lieut. Zachary	176, 177
Dana Family	54
Davenport, Rev. Addington	179, 180

PAGE

Davis, Elizabeth Thaxter 228
Davis Point 251, 255
Dawes, Rev. Ebenezer 166
Deacon Hatherly Foster House 107
Deacon Litchfield's Point 252
Deacon Stephen Clap House 101
Dead Swamp 62
Deane, Rev. Samuel 130, 172, 173
Deane's "History of Scituate" 173, 188
Delano, Benjamin 76
Delano, Edward F. 133
Delano Family Line 131
Delano Hill 133
Delano Mansion 130
Delano, William 131, 150
Delano, William Hart 133
De la Noye, Philip 132
Delaware 246
Derby Academy 97, 121
Derby, John 155
Derby, Madam 97
De Ruyter 257
Desire 154
Devonian 260
Dispatch 246
Doane, Col. 42
Doane, Elisha, Jr. 42
Doane, Horace 107
Doggett, Capt. John 59
Doggett's Ferry 59, 63, 64
Doherty, Rev. Manassas 205
Doherty, Mary 206
Donnell, William Cushing 50
Dorby, Rev. Jonathan 171, 172
Dorr, Capt. 245
Dorr, Rev. Harvey E. 192
Dr. Barnes Parsonage 129
Dr. Cushing Otis House 127
Dr. Elisha James House 137
Dr. Ephraim Otis House 121
Dr. Isaac Otis House 118
Driftway, The 141
Drinkwater 10
Drinkwater Mill 18
Driscoll, Patrick 205
Dublin 247
Duffy, Mary Ellen 205
Dunbar House 122
Dunbar, Jesse 122, 220, 264
Dunbar Store 158
Dunbar's Mill 220
Dunham, Isaac 240
Dunster, Rev. Henry 164

PAGE

Duxbury & Cohasset R. R. 65
Dwelley's "History of Hanover" 182

E

Early Artists 226
Early Industries 27
Early Poets 223
Early Settlement 1
Echo Lake 216
Edith 160
Edson, Edward 257
Edson, George 260
Edward 245
Edward H. Norton 256
Eells Field 126
Eells, Rev. Nathaniel 102, 111, 124, 171
Eells Pear Tree 126
Egan, Rev. J. P. 207
Egypt 68, 235
Eliza 157
Elizabeth 248, 250
Elizabeth 251
Ellms, Charles 97
Ellms, Charles Otis 95, 103, 262
Ellms, J. Otis 97
Ellms, Rodolphus 23
Elmwood 34
Elsie Fay 254
Emerson, Dr. 185
Emigrations 5, 6
Emily 254
Emma W. Brown 259
Emmons, Nathaniel 156
Ensign, Thomas 23
Enterprise 153
Epworth League 192
Ewell, Henry 7, 12, 76
Ewell, Mary 110

F

Fagan, Rev. Gerald 206
Fairbanks, Richard 61
Family of Judges, The 35
Fanny Fern 257
Farm Neck 87, 88, 163
Farms, The 24
Farrar, William 66
Faulkner, Francis T. 241
Federal George 245
Ferguson, William 65
"Field of Waterloo" 174
Finley, Hugh 62

	PAGE
First Baptist Church	195
First Church of Norwell	169
First Cliff Beach	250
First Parish	136
First Parish Church	162
Fish, Rev. William H.	175
Fisher, Mary	72
Fitzgerald, Richard	36
Fletcher, Edward and Henry W.	157
Flint, Lucy	194
Florence	255
Florence A. Zink	255
Florow	265
Flurries Rock	254
Fogg, Mrs. Betsey	130
Fogg, Ebenezer T.	130
Fogg, Horace T.	130
Ford, John J.	262
Ford, Mary A.	64, 66
Ford, Michael	148
Ford, Peleg, M.D.	66
Forest Queen	249
Foss, Eugene N.	146
Foster, Benjamin P.	64, 65, 219
Foster, Edward	2, 3, 107
Foster, Elisha (Lieut.)	107, 150
Foster, Dea. Hatherly	66, 107, 108
Foster, John	66, 108
Foster, Mary	108, 109
Foster, Mary Louisa	227
Foster, Samuel	151, 227
Foster, Seth	64, 65, 126, 151
Foster, Timothy	108, 170
Foster, Turner	151
Fourth Cliff	245, 246, 250
Fourth Cliff Life-Sav. Sta.	254, 258
Fox, George	72
Fox Hill Yard	148
Frances Burr	247
Francis	245
Franciscan	150
Franklin, Benjamin	62
Franzen, Capt.	260, 261
Frederick Tudor	257
Freeman, John	19
French Neutrals	79, 82
Frye, Amy Allen	103
Frye, Charles W.	223
Fuller, Milton, M.D.	126
Fuller, Rev. William A.	175

G

	PAGE
Gaffield, Mrs. Thomas	124, 170
Gallagher, Father	204
Gallup, Benjamin	150
Garceau, Albert	135
Garden Satin, The	51
Gardiner-Greene Mansion	34
Gardner, Jefferson	215
Gardner, John	200
Garrisons	9
Gaynor, Mary	205
Geneva	250
George Peabody	251
George S. Boutwell	259
George Torrey's Hill	29
Gillson, William	3, 210
Glades Point	89
Glades, The	241
Globe	150
Goddard, William	62
Golden Fleece	160
Gooch, Catherine	85, 86
Goodwin, Timothy	62
Gorham, Widow	190
Governor Russell	260
Grand Army Hall	196
Granderson, Simeon	83
Grand Pré	78
Gray, Mrs. Anthony	198
Great Storm of 1898	242
Great Swamp	61
Great Swamp Fight	8
Green, James	109
Green, Joseph Tilden	109
Greenbush, The	210
Gridley, Jeremy	36
Grose, John	222
Grosvenor, Rev. Ebenezer	165
Groundsell Brook	217
Gull Ledge	247, 248
Gull Rock	241
Gully, The	242
"Gulph," The	88, 219
Gunning's Point	250, 252
Gutterson, John H.	133

H

Hackett, Charles	218
Hackett, Joseph	218
Hackett, Wallace	218
Hackett's Pond	236
Half-Way House	67
Hammatt, William	50
Hammatt, William Cushing	44
Hancock, John	203
Hanford, Lettice	107

PAGE

Hannaford, Mrs. Phoebe 185
Harrub, Isaac 221
Hart, Capt. John 133
Hart, Sarah 132
Hartt, Edmund 130
Hartt, Samuel 130, 150
Harvest Queen 252
Haskins, William 181
Hatch, Capt. Crowell 155
Hatch, Daniel 152
Hatch, Jeremiah (Jeremy) 23, 153
Hatch, John 219
Hatch, Samuel 134, 212
Hatch, Turner 100
Hatch, Walter 153
Hatch, William 95
Hatchet Rock 234
Hatherly Inn 86
Hatherly Pear Tree 87
Hatherly Road 88
Hatherly, Timothy 1, 2, 3, 4, 6, 22, 23, 73, 84, 86, 87, 88, 89, 107, 163, 169
Hayden, Tamsen 91
Hayes, Rutherford B. 116
"Hazards," The 253
Hazard, Thomas, Jr. 150
Helen M. Foster 152, 216
Henchman House 124
Henchman's Corner 29, 63, 124, 130
Henderson Camp 243
Herring Brook, First 27, 210, 219, 221
Herring Brook Hill 62, 66, 129
Herring Brook, Second 62, 75, 109, 151, 221
Herring Brook, Third 10, 17, 101, 214, 215, 220
Hersey, Dr. Ezekiel 121
Hersey, Rachel 121
Hibben, Rev. H. B. 191
Hibernia 247
Hilliard, George S. 224, 227
Hilo 149
Hinckley Papers 12
Hinckley, Thomas (Gov.) 16
"History of Plymouth County" 177
Hoar, John 23, 24, 33
Hobart, Israel 153
Hobart's Landing 58, 153, 154, 155
Holbrook, Samuel 218
Holland, Capt. Joseph 150

PAGE

Home Mission Society 200
Hoop Pole Hill 29, 111, 124, 125
Hope On 148
Hoppin, Gov. 50
Hotspur 254
House, Samuel, Jr. 153
Hovey, Richard 225
Howland, Joseph 62
Hubbard, Capt. Joshua 33
Hudson, John 18
Hull, Capt. John 60
Humarock Beach 254, 255, 260
Hummock Beach 247
Hyland, John 246

I

Indian Head River 61
Indian Raid of 1676 7
Ingham 161
Ingham, Mary 224
Ingham, Thomas 27, 224
Interesting Bill of Sale 265
Iris 156
Isaac Carlton 255

J

Jackson, Nancy 112
Jackson, William 42
Jacob, David (Dea.) 26, 66, 134, 217
Jacob, Edward 63
Jacob, Eunice 134
Jacob, John (Col.) 10, 121
Jacob, Joseph 82
Jacob, Mary 133
Jacob, Relief 66
Jacobs, Dr. Henry Barton 121, 217
Jacobs Homestead 120
Jacobs, Ichabod Richmond 121
Jacobs, James 121
Jacobs, Dr. Joseph 120, 217
Jacobs, Joshua 120, 217
Jacobs, Lemuel 141, 221
Jacobs Mill 121, 184, 217
Jacobs, Perez 26
Jacobs Pond 29, 217
Jacobs Tavern 66
J. A. Jesuroon 160
James, Benjamin 181
James Bowker House 101
James, Dr. Elisha 137, 138
James, Elisha 226
James, John 11

	PAGE
James, Dea. John, 3d	100
James, Josiah Leavitt	175
James Library	175
James, Rhoda	100
James, Sarah	226
James, Will	103
James, William	152, 157
James, William, Jr.	153
Jay, Chief Justice	43
Jenkins, Ambrose	189
Jenkins Bridge	141
Jenkins, Calvin	140
Jenkins, Colman	141
Jenkins, Davis	251
Jenkins, D. Sanford	220
Jenkins, Elijah	207
Jenkins Farm	212
Jenkins House	141
Jenkins, Mrs. Laura A.	208
Jenkins Ledge	251
Jenkins Point	251
Jennings, Rev. Allan G.	167, 168
Jennison, Nathaniel	38
Jenny Lind	248
Jenny Mill	214
Jericho Beach	229
Jericho Road	84, 205
Jewett, Rev. Paul	194
Job Otis' Warehouse	103
Job's Landing	58
Joel Cook	254
John Endicott	259
Johnson, Sergt. Humphrey	21
Jolly Tar	157
Jonah's Mill	215
Jonas H. French	261
Jones, Capt. Ezekiel	161
Jones Hill	222
Jones, John	222
Jordan, John	125
Joshua Otis House	95
Joy, Thomas	18
Judge Cushing Memorial	60
Judge Cushing Road	46, 60
Judge Hathaway	250
Judson, Rev. Adoniram	196
Julia Lingley	252
June Bright	255
J. W. Paige	158
J. & J. Locke	256

K

Keith, Judge	221
Kelton, Rev. William H.	199
Kennebecke Plantation	16
Kent, David	157
Kent, John	157
Kent, Samuel	157
Kent, Sarah E. E.	101
Kent Street	3, 4, 167
Kent Yard	157
Killam, Rev. Robert L.	66
King, Dea. George	99, 100
King House, The	98
King, Lydia	55, 125
King Philip's War	101
King, Dea. Thomas	98
King's Highway, The	59
King's Inn	68
King's Landing	58
Knapp, Jacob	196
Kronstadt	156

L

Ladies' Aid Society	191
Ladies' Union	192
Lady Madison	150
Lafayette	250
La Hogue	145, 149, 159
Lawson, Rev. Deodate	171
Lawson Flier, The	68
Leddy, Rev. Peter	206
Lee, George C.	199
Leonard, Eliphalet	67
Leonard, Rev. William	189
"Leonard's"	68
Le Vante	153
Lewis, George	27
Lexington Normal School	174
Licking Creek	106
Lighthouse Point	254, 257
Light-Wing	256
Lillie, Samuel	151
Lincoln, Abraham	106
Lincoln, Isaac	104, 106
Lincoln, Jacob	105, 106
Lincoln, John	106
Lincoln Mills, The	105, 216
Lincoln, Mordecai	71, 104, 105, 216
Lincoln, Sally	91
Lincoln, Samuel	104
Lincoln, Solomon	11
Lincoln, Thomas	106
Lincoln's Mill Pond	71
Litchfield, Betsey	193
Litchfield, Charles A.	219
Litchfield, Davis	193
"Litchfield Family in America"	3

PAGE

Litchfield, Capt. Joshua 247
Litchfield, Josiah 217
Litchfield, Mrs. Seth 188
Litchfield, Dea. Ward 193
Litchfield, Warren and Stephen 24
Little, Barnabas 117
Little, Capt. David 116
Little, Capt. James 66, 103
Little, Jedediah 64
Little, Mercy 117
Little Musquashcut Pond 90
Little Otis 157
Little's Bridge 30, 153
Lively 151
Livermore, Rev. David 222
Livermore, Mary A. 185, 222
Long Beach 247, 248, 252
Long Ledge 245, 253, 259
Lord, Capt. 251
Lothrop, Rev. John 3, 4, 5, 163, 164
Lothrop, Maj. Thomas 42
Lovering, Hon. W. C. 146
Lucy 156
Lucy Graham 254
Luddam's Ford 61
Lunt, Hon. George 224
Lydia 152
Lynch, Edward 206

M

Machell, Mary 75
Maddock, John 208
Madison, President 43
Magellan 160
Magnum 258
Magoon, Dea. Ambrose 221
Maine 246, 247
Maine Law 252
Man, Ensign 25
Man, Nathaniel 24
Man, Rebecca 24
Man, Richard 23, 24, 25
Man, Thomas 9, 24
Mann Hill 23
Mann, Horace 174
Mann, "Marm" 25, 26
Mann, Priscilla 25, 26
Manson, Capt. Edmund S. 160
Manson, George 159
Manson, Joel Lincoln 159
Manson, Capt. John 159
Manson, Capt. John, Jr. 149, 159, 160

PAGE

Manson, Capt. Nehemiah 159
Manson, Nehemiah, Jr. 159
Manson, Thomas 159
Manson, William 159, 160
Maracaibo 253
Margaret's Brook 219
Maria 247
Mariposa 160
Martha 161
Martha Allen 158, 159
Martha Weeks 253
Martin, John 66
Mary 152
Mary and Nancy 151
Mary and Polly 153
Mary Cabral 260
Mary Emerson 257
Mary E. Peirce 249
Mary Killem 253
Massachusetts 156
Massachusetts Anti-Slavery Society 173
Massachusetts Bay Co. 148
Massachusetts Gazette 102
Massachusetts Humane Society 244, 251, 253, 255, 257, 259, 261
Massachusetts Path 60
Matakeesett Path 11
Matiana 261
May Elms, The 11, 138
May, Joseph 139
May, Rev. Samuel J. 139, 173, 174, 175
McDonough, Rev. William 207
McSparren, Rev. James 102
M. E. Church at Church Hill 200
Meeting-house Hill 171
Meeting-house Lane 4, 85, 163, 176, 224
Mellen, Rev. Mr. 183
Melzar Turner Yard 158
Memorable Storms 239
Men of Kent 2, 3, 162
Merchant Adventurers 1
Meridian 160
Merritt, Asa 167
Merritt, Billings H. 208
Merritt, Frances Adelaide 191
Merritt, Henry 2, 152
Merritt, Jonathan 264
Merritt, Joseph 152
Merritt, Joseph F. 215, 222
Merritt, Joseph, 2d 216
Merritt, Noah 151
Merritt, Obadiah 151
Merritt, Seth 264

PAGE

Meteor 158
Meteyard Marion 225
Meteyard, Thomas 225
Methodist Episcopal Church 186
Mighill, Rev. Thomas 124, 170
Military Discipline 7
Miller, Rev. Ebenezer 178, 179
Miller, Rev. R. C. 191
Millerites, The 188
Mills 210
Miner, Rev. A. A. 185
Minnie Rowan 257
Minot's Ledge Lighthouse 91, 144, 240, 248
Montezuma 161
Mora 250
Mordecai Lincoln House 104
Mordecai Lincoln Road 71
More, Richard 23
Morgan, F. H. 187
Morton, Nathaniel 95
Moseley, Rev. William O. 174
Mossing 229
Moulton, Robert 148
Mt. Blue 29
Mt. Blue Mill 217
Mt. Hope, R. I. 13, 85
Mt. Hope Shingle Mill 218
Mt. Vernon 150
Mt. Vernon 250
Mungo's Corner 219
Murphy, John F. 205
Murphy, Mary Kane 205
Murphy, Patrick 205
Murray, Rev. John 185
Musquashcut Farm 88
Musquashcut Harbor 89
Musquashcut Pond 24, 87, 88, 89, 90, 92, 242
Musquashcut River 218

N

Nancy 157
Nanemackeuitt 17, 214
Nantasket 260
Narragansett Church 102
Narragansett Fight 8
Nash, John 126, 130
Nash, John K. 63
Nash, Joseph 120, 152
Nash, Mary L. F. 227
Nathaniel Cogswell 252
Nausett 258
Navigation 159

PAGE

Neal Gate 41, 63
Neal Gate Road 41, 53
Neil, John 29
New Bedford 156
Newcomb, Edgar A. P. 118
New Harbor Marshes 59
New Sally 152
New York Mirror 223
Nichols, Lucy Peirce 24
Nichols, Thomas 153
Northern Light 250
Northey, John 12, 224
Northey, Joseph 223
North Meeting-house 166
North River 147
North River Bridge Yard 245
North River, New Mouth 238
Norwell Farm 251
Nutter, Rev. Charles S. 191
Nymph 149

O

Oakman's Ferry 64
O'Brien, Miles 204
Ocean Monarch 248
Oceanus 258
O'Connell, Cardinal 207
Oglethorpe 161
Old Braintree 178
Old Carpenter 157
Old Col. Boundary Commission 69, 70, 71
Old Colony Line 69, 70
Old Colony Railroad 64
Old Curtis Yard 151
Old Lighthouse at Scituate Harbor 143
Old North Church, Boston 176
Old Oaken Bucket 195, 224
Old Oaken Bucket Pond 236
Old Parsonage 123, 129, 163
Old Pond 11, 214
Old Sloop 166, 167, 168
Oliver, Elizabeth 34
Oracle 157
Organ Society, The 192
Orient 149
O'Riley, John 205
Oscar 248
Osher Rocks 231
Otis, Abigail 97
Otis, Abigail Brooks 103
Otis, Abigail Cushing 56
Otis, Abigail T. 56, 128
Otis, Abijah 158

	PAGE
Otis, Charles	118
Otis, Dr. Cushing	56, 128
Otis, Daniel	77, 122
Otis, Edwin	158, 220
Otis Ellms' Beach	252
Otis, Ensign	218
Otis, Ensign, 3d	103
Otis, Dr. Ephraim	121
Otis, George	137
Otis, George Washington	96
Otis, Hannah	129
Otis, Harriet	128
Otis, Howland	220
Otis, Howland & Edwin	239
Otis, Dr. Isaac	118, 119, 127
Otis, James	48, 128
Otis, Dr. James	119
Otis, Mayor James	96
Otis, Job	157
Otis, John	117, 118
Otis, Joseph	117
Otis, Joseph C.	219, 262
Otis, Joshua	95, 97, 118
Otis, Joshua, Jr.	96
Otis, Mary	97
Otis, Mary Greene	122
Otis, Mary Thaxter	97
Otis, Rachel Hersey	121
Otis, Sally	97
Otis, Sarah Harris	122
Otis, Silas	118
Otis, Capt. Stephen	29, 95
"Outlines of History," Wells	39

P

Pacific	151
Packet	152
Paine, Charles Cushing	39
Paine, Sarah	54
Palmer, Benjamin	180
Palmer, John	29, 148
Palmer, John, Jr.	148
Parker, Jones & Co.	64
Parker Lane	141
Parker, Rev. Samuel	182
"Parsonage Row"	130
Parsonage, South Parish	130
Parsons, Esther	50
Parsons, Theophilus	42
Parsons, Dr. Thomas W.	224
Past Geography of Scituate	231
Patent Line (Patten Line)	69
Peakes (Pakes), William	23
Peggotty Beach	229
Peirce, Calvin	218
Peirce, Elijah	66
Peirce, Elisha	218
Peirce Farm	24
Peirce, Capt. Hayward	66, 91
Peirce, Capt. Michael	8, 25, 66
Peirce, Silas	235
Peirce's Building Yard	218
Peirce's Mill	218
Perry, Capt.	250
Perry, William	8
Perse	246
Peruvian	151
Peters, Gorham	260
Phelan, Rev. M. J.	207
Philbrook, Rev. Nathan P.	201
Phillips, Esther	46
Phillips, George	46
Phillips, Hannah	37, 46
Phoebe	153
Pincin Lane	98
Pinckney, Mary	49
Pine Tree Hill	179
Pintard, John Marden	155
Pintard, Lewis, & Co.	155
Pitcher, Rev. Nathaniel	165
Plymouth Coast Road	59
Point Judith Neck	60
Polycarp	248
Portland	242
Post Roads and Taverns	58
Power, Arthur L.	140
Power, Mrs. Arthur L.	227
Pownalborough	36
Pratt, Elias	148
Pratt, Harvey H.	146
Prence, Gov. Thomas	16, 73
Prentiss, Mrs. Henrietta	208
President's Bridge	34
Priscilla	156
Prospect Hill	235
Prouty, Edward or Isaac	151
Prouty, John E. O.	220
Puffer, Rev. Stephen	188
Pulling, Capt. John	97
Puritan	258

Q

Quaco	38, 39
Quakers in Scituate	72
Queen Ann	67
Queen Ann's Corner	67
Queen Ann's Turnpike	64
Quincy, Samuel	156
Quonahassett	232

R PAGE

Randall, Job 151
Rawlins, Nathaniel 99
Rawlins, Thomas 11, 99
Rebecca Goddard 160
Rehoboth Massacre 8
Revere, Paul 97
Reynolds, Philip 189, 220
Richardson Bros. 218
Richmond, Clarissa 121
Richmond, Deborah 121
Richmond, Elizabeth 121
Richmond, Hannah 121
Ripley, Capt. Hezekiah 114
Roach, "Father" 204, 205
Robinson, Isaac 73
Robinson, Rev. John 73, 163
Rogers House 10
Roman Catholic Church 202
Rosebud 149, 159
Rotten Marsh 60, 98
Rouse (Rose), John 75
Rowley, Henry 3
Roxana 245
Royall House 34
Royall, Penelope 34
Rugg, Chief Justice 37, 46
Russell, George 134, 211
Ruth 252

S

Saffin, John 33
Sally Badger 251
Salmond, Agnes 215
Salmond, John 215
Salmond, Samuel 215
Salmond, William 215
Sampson, Jonathan 245
Sampson, Sophia 208
Samuel Clap's New House 101
Samuel Hatch House 134
Samuel Soper 158
Sand Hills, The 237, 242
Sarah 158
Sarah Brooks 160
Sarah Jane 152
Sarah's Adventure 157
Satuit Brook 2, 3, 66, 141, 157
Satuit House 66
Saucy Jack 152
Saxton, Mr. Giles 4, 163
Schauffler, Robert Haven 213
Scituate Charity House 244, 251
Scituate Historical Society 45, 85, 135
Scituate Light 187, 245, 246

PAGE

Seaflower 151
Seagrave, Rev. Edward 196
Seaside Chapel 208
Seaver, Rev. Nathaniel 168
Seaverns, Henry A. 208
"Seaward," Richard Hovey 225
Second Church 169, 170
Second Church of Christ in Scituate 164
Second Cliff Beach 248
Sergeant Samuel Stetson House 98
Sewall, Rev. Edmund Q. 164, 167
Sewall, Judge Samuel 167
Sharpless, James 50
Sharpless Portraits 47, 50, 53
Sherman's Corner 62, 208
Shipbuilding 147
Shipman, Professor 185
Shore Acres 251, 252
Sidney 246
Sir H. Douglas 245
Sivret, James 67
Slate Island 235
Smith, Capt. Joseph 158
Smith, Rev. Phineas 194
Smith, William 67, 220
Smyrna 151
Smyth, Rev. Hugh 206
Sons of Temperance 190, 205
Sophronia 149
Souther, Laban 152
South Meeting-house 166
South Parish 172
South Shore House 67
South Shore R. R. 65
Southworth, Alice 226
Southworth, Constant 17, 19, 226
Southworth, George 226, 228
Southworth, Nathan 226, 227, 228
Southworth, Thomas (Capt.) 16, 19, 226
Spartacus 158
Spaulding, Rev. A. D. 199
Spencer 246
Spofford, Rev. Luke A. 194
Sprague, Jacob 65
Spring Brook 101
Stamboul 160
Standish, Capt. Miles 7, 107
St. Andrew's Church 176
Stanley, Capt. Frederick 254, 256, 259
Stearns, George 98

PAGE

Stearns, R. H. 98
Stedman, Isaac 134, 210
Stedman Mill 27, 60
Stepping Stones 218
Stetson, Benjamin 21
Stetson, Rev. Caleb 174
Stetson, Ebenezer 150, 178, 181
Stetson, Eunice 21
Stetson, Francis Lynde 22
Stetson, Honor 22, 98
Stetson, John 150, 181, 218
Stetson, John B. 22
Stetson, Jonah 215
Stetson, Jonathan 139
Stetson, Lois 21
Stetson, Lydia Barker 178
Stetson, Mary Kimball 200
Stetson, Matthew 149
Stetson Road 200
Stetson, Cornet Robert 4, 10, 11, 12, 15, 16, 21, 150, 170, 174, 213, 214
Stetson, Robert, Jr. 11
Stetson, Samuel (Sergt.) 21, 98, 181, 200, 215
Stetson, Snow 150
Stetson, Thomas 21
Stetson, Timothy 21
Stetson, Rev. William H. 200, 202
Stetson's Tide Mill 218, 239
Stillwell, Mary Carr 48
St. Mary's, N. B. 83
Stockbridge, Benjamin 177, 181
Stockbridge, Benjamin, M.D. 177, 212
Stockbridge, Charles 181, 212, 214, 217
Stockbridge, Charles, M.D. 212
Stockbridge, Charles, Jr., M. D. 212
Stockbridge, Emily 212
Stockbridge, Hosea 218
Stockbridge, Jacob 218
Stockbridge, James 218
Stockbridge, John 9, 211, 212
Stockbridge, Joseph 218
Stockbridge Mansion 211
Stockbridge, Mary 212
Stockbridge Mills 134, 212
Stockbridge Pond 27, 170
Stockbridge, Remembrance 215
Stockbridge Road 45
Stockbridge, Samuel 91, 212, 217
Stockbridge, Thomas 214

PAGE

Stony Beach 242
Stony Brook Farm 11
Stony Cove Brook 170
Storm of 1851 239
Stoughton, Rev. John 75
St. Paul 149
Strawberry Cove 89
Strong, Gov. Caleb 25
St. Stephen's Church 209
Studley, Elizabeth 135
Studley Hill 29
Sullivan, "Father" 204, 205
Sumner, Hon. Charles 66
Susan Jane 157
Susie Kiffen 255
Sutliffe, Sergt. Abram 12
Swallow 154
Sweet Swamp 24
"Swimmin' Hole," The 218
Sylvester, Edmund Q. 215
Sylvester, Elisha 216
Sylvester, Israel 124, 216
Sylvester, Katie and Pattie 200, 202
Sylvester, Samuel 151
Sylvester, Thomas 216
Sylvester, Thomas, Jr. 216
Sylvester Wind Mill 217

T

Talbot, Capt. William H. 149
Talbot, Capt. Zephaniah 200, 215
"Tan Brook" 29, 64, 140, 207
Tannery Brook 28
Tart, Edward 89
Taylor, "Father" 188
Thayer, Rev. John 202
Thaxter, Mary 95, 97
Thaxter, Sally 97
"The Green Bush" 4
The Trojan 253
Third Cliff 154, 247
Thomas, Dr. Francis 123
Thomas, Frank, M. D. 207
Thomas, Ichabod 156
Thomas, Mercy 156
Thomas, Nathaniel Ray 68
Thomas, Rev. Nehemiah 43, 44, 129, 163, 166, 193
Thompson, Rev. Ebenezer 180
Thompson, Jane 182
Thomson, Robert 156
Thorndike, Israel 136
Three Friends 156

PAGE

Ticknor Hill 205
Tiffany Mill 215
Tiffany Pond 215
Tiffany, Recompense 215
Tiffany Road 214, 215
Tilden, Abigail 56
Tilden, Hannah 114
Tilden House 114
Tilden, Job 265
Tilden, Joseph 114, 218
Tilden, Joseph, Jr. 265
Tilden, Jotham 152
Tilden, Elder Nathaniel 2, 116
Tilden, Patience 114
Tilden Road 114
Tilden, Samuel Jones 116
Tilden, Thacher 127
Tilden, Rev. William P. 53, 56, 108, 153
Tilden's Point 248, 250, 255, 258
Tingley, Rev. Mr. 198
Toad Rock 234
Tolman, Capt. Benjamin 28
Tolman, Mrs. Betsey 201, 202
Tolman, Elisha 148, 180
Tolman, Joseph 221
Tolman, Joseph, Mill 221
Tolman, Samuel 214
Tom Corwin 149
Torrey, Birthplace of Charles Turner 140
Torrey, Caleb 66
Torrey, Charles Turner 140
Torrey Clothing Mill 213
Torrey, David 152, 153
Torrey, David, Box Factory 222
Torrey, David, Jr. 220
Torrey, Everett 220
Torrey, George 151, 153
Torrey, George E. 220
Torrey, George, Jr. 152
Torrey, Howard C. 220
Torrey, James 11, 22, 27, 152, 213
Torrey, John Day 68
Torrey, Josiah 126
Torrey, Sally 139
Torrey, Vesta 220
Torrey, Widow 11
Torrey, Willard 220
Torrey's Mill 216, 219
Torrey's Pond 236
Tower, Betsey 161
Town Seals 262
Town Way 16

PAGE

T. P. Perkins 250
Trahan, John and Peter 81
T. Remick 256
Trinitarian Congregational Church 192
Tufts, Mary 112
Turner, Albion 219
Turner, Azro 87
Turner, Charles 29
Turner, Charles, Jr. (Col.) 63
Turner, Hon. Charles 56
Turner, David 222
Turner, David W. 216
Turner, Elijah 219
Turner, Elijah, Mill 219
Turner Farm 95, 163
Turner, Humphrey, 2, 3, 28, 127
Turner, Israel 124
Turner, James 98, 242
Turner, James, Farm 239
Turner, James Nathaniel 97
Turner, J. Frank 221
Turner, John 28, 221, 127
Turner, John, Sr. 127
Turner, Jonathan 127
Turner, Joseph 8, 127
Turner, Lemuel 219
Turner, "Little John" 129
Turner, Mary Ellms 97
Turner, Mrs. Mary 261
Turner, Melzar 158, 220
Turner, Miles 219
Turner, Nathaniel 29, 97
Turner, Perez 218
Turner, Philip 126
Turner, Samuel 239
Turner, Samuel A. 29, 219, 221
Turner, Samuel A., Mill 221
Turner, William D. 216, 222
Turner & Jacobs Nail Mill 221
Turner's Beach 256
Turner's Meadow 250, 253
Two Mile 4, 5, 10, 15, 65, 221
Two Stacks 116

U

Union Bridge 64, 150
Union Bridge Road 107, 170, 171
Union Chapel, Sherman's Corner 208
Union Hall 163, 189, 190
Unitarian Society 136

PAGE

Unity 157
Universalist Church, Assinippi 182
Upper Parish 164

V

Valparaiso 160
Van Natter, Rev. Mr. 191
Vassall, Benjamin 33
Vassall, Frances 32
Vassall, Henry 34
Vassall, John 30, 34
Vassall, Capt. John 32, 33
Vassall, Col. John 34
Vassall, Judith 32
Vassall, Capt. Leonard 34
Vassall, Samuel 30
Vassall, William 3, 4, 30, 36, 59, 60, 169, 170
Vassalls at Belle House Neck 30
Vassall's Ferry 60
Vinal, Ann 160
Vinal, Charles 167
Vinal, Cushing 190
Vinal, Capt. Ezra 195
Vinal, Capt. Henry 158, 160
Vinal, John 8, 67
Vinal, Stephen 23
Vinal, William 157, 158
Vinal, Capt. William 190
Vinton's Hall 207

W

Wade, Aunt Polly 136
Wade-Bryant House 137
Wade, Eunice 137
Wade, Joseph 136
Wade, Nicholas 65
Wade, Simeon 136
Walbach, George 254, 257
Wales, Thomas B. 156
Walker, Charles 221
Walker, Quork 38
Walnut Tree Hill 12, 37, 52, 63, 76
Wampatucke 17
Wanton Bury-Ground 77
Wanton, Edward 11, 75, 150
Wanton, John 76
Wanton Shipyard 75, 149, 151, 156, 247
Wanton, William 76, 110
Wantons, The 6

PAGE

Ward, Arthur 205, 256
Ward, Daniel 203, 204
Ward, William 257
Ware, Nicholas 33
Warren, Mrs. Mercy 49
Washington 156
Washington, President 43
Waterman, Anthony 157
Waterman, Ebenezer C. 28
Waterman, James 28
Waterman, Capt. Thomas 148
Waterman, Thomas 28
Waterman, Thomas B. 148
Watson, William 62
"Wayside Inn" 225
Webb, Capt. Seth 207
Webb's Island 239
Weber Charities Trust 209
Webster, Daniel 68
Weekly Intelligencer 61
Welch, E. Parker 190, 253, 255, 261
Welch, Michael 189, 239
Wells, H. G. 39
"West Newland" 30
Wetherell, Sergt. Theophilus 8
Wetherell, Rev. William 16, 170
Wheeler, Moses 156
Wheeler, Rev. William W. 182
Whistler 254
Whitcomb, Jonathan 23
Whitcomb, Robert 23, 74
White, Capt. Benjamin 156
White, Gowin 23
Whitehead 241
White Oak Plain 101, 103, 121, 219
White, Peregrine 32
White, Resolved 32
White, Sarah 114
White's Ferry 187, 251
Whiton, Ann 67
Whitridge, William Cushing 55
Whittaker 251
Whittemore, Capt. Isaac 130, 161
Whittemore, Dr. Joseph L. 130
Whitten, Davis 67
Wight, Rev. Daniel P., Jr. 194, 195
Wildcat 103, 121
Wildcat Hill 29
Wilhelmina 248
Wilkins, S. F. 241
Willet, Capt. Thomas 16
Willett, John W. 202

	PAGE
William P. Nettleton	253
Williams, Archbishop	206
Williams-Barker House	84
Williams, Capt. John	13, 85
Williams, Ensign John	23
Williams, John	9, 84, 85, 163
Will James Yard	157
Wilson, Joseph	240
Wilson's Hill	170
Windsor, Fanny	188
Windsor, Susan	188
Winslow, Rev. Edward	181
Winslow, Col. John	154
Winslow, Maj. John	78, 80
Winslow, Josias, Sr.	16
Winslow, Maj. Josias, Jr. (Gov.)	12, 13, 16, 17
Winslow, Kenelm	32
Winslow, Maj. Nathaniel	214
Winter, John	11
Witherell, Sally	122
Wood, Judge Wilkes	126
Woodworth, Mehitabel	27, 224
Woodworth, Samuel	195, 223
Woodworth, Thomas	12
Worcester Art Museum	85
Wormall, Joseph	18
W. Parnell O'Hara	256
Wrecks on Scituate's Shore	245
Wright, Edward	11, 99
Wright, John	8
Wright, Rev. G. W.	191

Y

Young, Gideon	63, 66
Young Turk	252
Young's Tavern	66